



**UNIVERSITÀ DEGLI STUDI DI MILANO**

**CORSO DI DOTTORATO IN FILOSOFIA E SCIENZE  
DELL'UOMO**

**ALPINE PROTECTED AREAS IN A CHANGING  
CLIMATE**

**A GEOGRAPHY OF SCIENCE PERSPECTIVE**

Tutors: Prof. Luca BONARDI  
Prof. Sandro RINAURO

Tesi di Dottorato di  
Emiliano TOLUSSO

ANNO ACCADEMICO 2017-2018



## Table of contents

<b>0</b>	<b>Introduction</b> .....	3
<b>I.</b>	<b>From Terra Incognita to a Scientific Region</b> .....	9
1	Of dragons and laboratories. A brief history of scientific interest in the Alpine region .....	9
2	Climate change in the Alps and scientific research .....	18
3	How is the Alpine climate changing?.....	28
4	Climate and the Alpine biomass.....	38
5	The effects of the climate on the abiotic substratum .....	43
<b>II</b>	<b>Epistemic geographies of climatic changes in protected areas</b> .....	47
1	Trapped in space: protected areas in a climate that is changing .....	47
2	Climate change in the protected areas: a geography of scientific interest .....	53
3	The greatest of all threats. Analyses of scientific-cultural discourse on climate change in the American protected areas.....	68
4	Conservation policies and catalysts of scientific interest .....	86
<b>III</b>	<b>Putting (climate change) science in its place</b> .....	92
1	Climate change and protected areas from Europe to the Alps .....	90
2	Scientific research in Alpine Protected Areas.....	94
I	Mapping climate change studies in Alpine Protected Areas.....	98
4	Study 1: Provincial science, cosmopolitan science. A thematic analysis of the dataset.....	110
5	Study 2: reconstructing the geography of the Alpine records .....	126
6	Venues of science, circulation of research, and scientific cultures .....	150
<b>IV.</b>	<b>The making of a scientific subregion: constructing climate change science, conserving nature in Swiss protected areas</b> .....	154
1	Protected areas and scientific research in Switzerland.....	166
2.	The epistemic community and the structure of experts interviews.....	163
3.	Unpacking the cluster: the Swiss National Park as a scientific hub for climate change monitoring.....	166
4.	The boundaries of climate change research.....	169
<b>V.</b>	<b>Concluding remarks</b> .....	198
	<i>Appendixes</i> .....	202
	<i>Cited references</i> .....	272

# Introduction

## 0.1 HONOR THE PROMISE

How can one define what a protected area is?

She should probably start with searching the meaning of a protected area, finding the goals that this land unit is called to chase, or the natural or cultural objects it stands for.

Over the course of human history, the pulsion of preserving a piece of land from the transformations of anthropic land-use created a plethora of very diverse reserves. However, the mission of every protected area could potentially be different. Protecting a valued game species has been historically one of the main drivers in the creation of some of the eldest protected areas in Europe, as in the case of Gran Paradiso. Or lately, even species we used to consider harmful became the target of legal initiatives that took the form of land protection, like wolves or bears, or lynxes. In some regions, we created protected areas for preserving wildlife from the threat of poaching, as in the Stelvio region, or in some African National Parks. In some country, we created protected areas to conserve even entire landscapes from the perils that the transformative forces of modernity entail, like in Japan. We instituted protected areas because we wanted to freeze in time ecosystems, as the entire US park system was meant to do, but at the same time, we created protected areas because we wanted to lose control of ecosystem processes and see how nature can develop without human intervention, as happened with the first and only National Park in Switzerland. Lately, the science of ecology thought us that what we believed to be an equilibrium was just one moment of transition in an infinite continuum. We decided that nature should be left alone to develop in its own terms, but we also founded new protected areas where paleo-ecological conditions could be recreated in order to test scientific hypotheses, as in the case of the Oostvaardersplassen in the Netherlands.

Protected areas are geographical riddles. They are land unit we are setting aside because we want them to stand in protection of our values, of something we deem worthy of being spared from progress and development. These values took many forms: gene pools, species, ecosystems, landscapes. Values have a history, and they have a geography as well. For this reason, protected areas have been defined with many names: “heterotopic spaces”(Vilismaier, 2016), “beautiful promises for the future” (Kupper, 2014), “spaces of nature”(Lorimer, 2015). Protected areas are, under a certain light, acts of resistance.

Global change, the large umbrella term used to point at many different processes taking place in large regions of the world, is threatening today the integrity and effectiveness of protected areas in honoring their promises. Of the many wide phenomena that are constituting global change, climate change is one of the most discussed, reported, narrated and analyzed. Climate change is a global threat for protected areas, since there are no walls, fences, or legal shields that can hide anyone from its effects. As a result, some of the values we want to protect, no matter if in the form of iconic species, regional biodiversity or landscape, are already being compromised. Global warming is teaching us that no ecosystem or landscape can be frozen in time. The same has to be acknowledged for the values we used to associate with protected areas and the natural objects they are protecting. Some of those values are fit to survive the new climate-altered reality, some of those are not.

Regardless the task of the protected area, climate change can transform, sometimes dramatically, protected areas as we know them today. If the task of answering these challenges rests primarily upon policy, park managers and policymakers are helpless without a solid, encompassing contribution coming from science. Building adaptive processes and new management paradigms is impossible without the guidance of science.

Exactly at this point, the geographical inquiry can be developed. Science has been a protagonist in the history of protected areas, and it will be even more a focal point in the future if we are to adapt and keep conserving wildlife, landscapes, ecosystems and the values they embody. However, science, despite being one of the most universal social endeavours of mankind, is not equally practiced everywhere in the world. Science maintain different roles in different protected areas. As a result, there are regions where scientific information is created more frequently. At the same time, different places are following different scientific paths. It is no surprise that Yellowstone National Park is involved in the creation and circulation of studies on wildlife and the effects of climate change, and produce scientific research more than any other protected area in the world. Conversely, it is highly surprising that climate change science can be completely excluded by the research activities carried in some protected areas in the Alps. International monitoring initiatives, in the meantime, are promoting the circulation of science beyond borders, and providing us with data and powerful images of the effects of climate change from all parts of the world. It is normal, in our everyday scientific landscape, to see proofs of new pioneer species settling in mountaintops in the Tien Shan Range, while living at the foothills of the Alps. We are accustomed to seeing pictures of glacier melting in National Parks in the Andean Cordillera while we spend time monitoring the upward and northward distributional shift of butterflies species in the Rocky Mountains. However, we seldom inquire in the precise geography of the distribution of scientific research. Which protected areas in which regions are producing more research? What are the factors that

influence distribution? This work aims at filling exactly this gap, with a particular focus on the Alpine range.

## 0.2 THE GEOGRAPHY OF CLIMATE SCIENCE IN PROTECTED AREAS. FROM A WORLD-WIDE PERSPECTIVE TO THE ALPINE RANGE

In a comprehensive paper published in 2017, Bennett et al. delineated the role, scope and aims of what they called “*conservation social sciences*”. In their efforts to promote social sciences as a mean “*to understand, improve conservation policies, practices and outcomes*” (p.94), they identified a set of disciplines that can actively contribute to the task. Among them, environmental geography was addressed as the only one focused in particular with the spatial dynamics that shape conservation. Our work intends to find its place in this recent current, as we try to understand how spatial processes and features impact the construction, conduct and circulation of environmental sciences in protected areas. Chasing this goal, we will rely on the epistemological instruments of the geography of science, while inquiring in classical environmental geography field, as conservation.

In the first chapter, we will address the development of the Alps as a scientific region. Starting with the analysis of the main paradigmatic positions assumed by science while studying Alpine environments, we will reconstruct some of the principal defining moments that shaped the path of science in this region, focusing in particular on the role of climate and climate research played in the story. After this initial historical focus, our attention will shift to contemporary research on climate change in the Alps, considering the volumes and the contents of scientific literature indexed in one of the main scientific databases in the world.

In the second chapter, we define the theoretical framework in which the study will take place, namely, the geography of science. This current is rather small in the broad fields of human and environmental geography, but encountered a growing interest lately, thanks especially to recent works addressing the problem of climate change. Having defined the theoretical tools we need to search for the answers we are chasing, we turn our attention towards one of the main methodological tools we need to develop the research, as network analysis will be a fundamental help in gathering the descriptive statistics we will need to understand trends and geographical hotspot in contemporary climate change research in PAs. After defining a large scale geography of climate change research, we focus on the most significant and productive research region as defined by the data. The United States is playing a leading role in climate change research in the context of PAs, and we will try to gain a better understanding of the

drivers and constraints, scopes and aims of research developed in this country. However, the methodological tools are going to change, from a preliminary geo-statistical analysis to a more in-depth qualitative approach, looking for, in Foucauldian terms, the general traits of the institutional and public discourse that is developing around research on climate change in PAs.

The third chapter will be completely devoted to a detailed analysis of the particular geography of climate change science in Alpine PAs. We will once again turn our attention to the insights that network analysis and science mapping can provide in order to shed light on issues as research composition and distribution. Additionally, we will try to overcome the limits of the scientometrics and metadata-based science mapping, looking for scientific programmes and projects focused on climate change in Alpine PAs. While chasing these very pragmatical tasks, we will test the validity of some theories and ideas coming from the traditional geography of science literature, as questions of “scientific cultures” and “circulation of science” will be addressed.

In the last chapter, we will turn our attention towards a subregion of the wider Alpine macroregion, namely Switzerland, in order to touch with our hands, and beyond the scope and capability of the previous analyses, what are the factors that limits or promote climate change research in PAs, what are the main features of climate change literature produced there, who is conducting research and where. This approach is aiming at a different goal than the previous chapter, since we look for the processes that govern the making of climate science, rather than the tangible products of science. In order to achieve these goals, we will employ a different methodology. The chapter will be based on experts interviews, conducted by the author during the last year, and will cover a wide range of topics arising from the results of the previous analyses.

It is easy to note that the research will employ a wide array of methodologies, ranging from quantitative to qualitative, from descriptive to critical approach, from data-driven to question-driven. In their work, Bennet et al. highlighted the broad range of scales and instruments in which conservation social sciences might make their contribution. We firmly believe that a contemporary geography of science – and more broadly speaking, environmental geography – could benefit from the integration of diverse epistemological perspectives and methodologies, that can help in making sense of complex patterns.

The adoption of mixed methodologies, however, has a cost. As the reader will certainly note, the chapters differ from one another: sometimes slightly, sometimes heavily. As the tools applied to the research questions change, even the tone and style of the narration change. Chapter 1 will provide a narrative account, while chapter two is based on a geographical characterization of research distribution,

and coherently – at least in our view – takes advantage of a descriptive and critical approach. Chapter 3, being totally focused on analysis of the networks of data, employs an IMRAD approach – Introduction, Methodology, Results and Discussion – that is most common in the domain of natural sciences, while the final chapter will employ again the form of a narrative journey through different perspectives provided by diverse forms of expertise.

Our hope is that the diversity of methodologies and styles can benefit the inquiry, without damaging the clarity of the arguments discussed. As Lucio Gambi, an influent Italian geographer used to say “*disciplines, defined by more or less precise and encompassing formulations, do not exist. Problems, that are to be addressed with every piece of science available, exist!*” (Bonardi, 2004). We also hope this research can stay true to this principle.

---

<sup>1</sup> In the original Italian version: *Le discipline, definite da formulazioni più o meno larghe, non esistono. Esistono problemi da risolvere con ogni mezzo di Scienza a disposizione*



# I. From Terra Incognita to a Scientific Region

## 1. OF DRAGONS AND LABORATORIES. A BRIEF HISTORY OF SCIENTIFIC INTEREST IN THE ALPINE REGION

The growth of the relationship between the Alps and Man is definitely a fascinating subject of vast complexity, the analysis of which requires the use of diverse sources. If then the researcher's interests turn specifically to reconstructing the relationship between Man's search for knowledge and the Alpine region, he will be following a thread that unwinds back over the centuries. He must combine the hazardous ventures of seventeenth-century explorers and mountaineers with the great modern centres of research. He must range widely, from the pioneering scientific enquiry of a University of Zurich physics professor, Johann Scheuchzer – who returned from his Alpine exploration with a great many botanical and mineralogical observations, mingled with ethnozoological notes on the taxonomy of the dragons native to the region (Fleming 2001; p.21) – up to the construction of forecast models of the distribution of the flora and fauna populations. Science has found in the Alps material that tests its boundaries, drawing it closer to the mysteries that nature presents: from the first random observations, the result of exploration in regions no better known than the Arctic or the Amazon, to the organization of systematic projects, and finally to true and active testing, conscious manipulation of the environment in order to explain nature's behaviour by scientific means.

The question of the birth and development of scientific interest in Alpine, and in general mountainous, environments is engrossing, not only for what we learn of the relationship between mountain and man over the centuries, but also, and perhaps above all, for the light it sheds on the epistemological foundations of science and scientific research. The mountain not only assumes the role of a field of strict application of the scientific method, of a passive setting for testing a method of acquiring information, but has also made an active contribution to defining the actual processes by which scientific knowledge is produced.

Although a true definition of 'mountain' remains more or less impossible on the basis of specifying the necessary and satisfactory conditions, the attempt to learn about and describe scientifically the phenomena that characterise mountainous environments has produced various paradigms, influenced by diverse scientific positions, already described elsewhere (Debarbieux, 2001; Brun, Perrin, 2001; Dobremez, 2001). It will, all the same, be useful here to recall what Bernard Debarbieux wrote of the stances assumed by different scientific schools of thought in relation to mountains. Debarbieux

recognised four main paradigms in scientific interest in specific topics of mountainous environments. The *paradigm of verticality* brings together all those research studies on the consequences of altitudinal development in mountain surveys as the structuring principles of the mountains' morphology and processes. Studies linked to the gravitational processes of the slopes, morphogenetic dynamics, the effects of atmospheric stratification, and variations in solar radiation in relation to the altitude, are all covered by this paradigm. By contrast, the *paradigm of the spatial system* concentrates on the intervening relationships between different phenomena of the mountain environment and hence on their reciprocal influences, searching for evidence capable of justifying a system-wide perspective. Research in ecological and geographical fields belongs to this thinking, in their enquiries into the influences between the components of a single ecosystem and between ecosystems and forms of human use of the environment. While more recent in its development, the *paradigm of the mountain as an indicator of global change* represents another perspective of fundamental observation. Research here is interested in the mountain as an ideal theatre in which to observe the unfolding of more extensive phenomena, due to growing evidence for the phenomenon studied in the particular geographical context and the more marked instability of mountain equilibrium. Research on climate change fits perfectly into this paradigm. Finally, the *paradigm of the cultural construct* looks at mountain phenomena under the lens of understanding the mountain as a collective representation. This paradigm, found only in human and social sciences, covers a range of research, from analysis of pictorial art and artefacts as tools for interpreting the representation mechanisms of the community to the adoption of public policies for self-representation in mountain contexts (Debarbieux, 2001, pp.101-121).

The specific case of the Alps is an exemplary case of Debarbieux's wider thinking: the Alpine range, in a pre-global age, was the preferred area for the scientific work of European academia, whose research activities, for obvious reasons, did not enjoy the mobility and circulation from which they benefit today. Scientific positions and paradigms that developed in Europe on the study of mountain phenomena were necessarily directed to the greatest mountain range of the continent. The geographical restrictions thus add up to the symbolic value of the region: the Alps represent one of the most iconic geographical areas of the world, with many examples in European literary tradition of the influence they exerted upon intellectuals from the 17th to 19th centuries. By the mid-seventeenth century, 'the Alps are no longer an unknown and hostile environment, but gradually [have become] a place of travel and an object of interest and veneration, and eventually almost a cult'<sup>2</sup> (Scaramellini, 1995, p.52), so becoming the object of scientific accounts, such as those of Saussure or Wyttembach, but also the preferred setting for narrative, through the descriptions of, among others, Goethe, Chateaubriand, and Percy and Mary

---

<sup>2</sup> 'le Alpi non sono più un ambiente ignoto e ostile, ma [divengono] progressivamente meta di viaggio e oggetto d'interesse, di venerazione, infine quasi di culto'

Shelley. European literary culture is steeped in Alpine iconography, in its huge frozen surfaces, its rocky bastions and deep valleys. Perhaps it is also thanks to the difficulty of distinguishing between the intellectual and the scientist that interest in the Alps leads to the supremacy of science, in particular due to the 'discovery' of the glaciers, of which there are vivid literary accounts, such as Mary Shelley's famous diary, written during an excursion to the Sea of Ice in 1816. Both glaciology and climatology remain fundamental themes in the growth of scientific interest in the Alpine range. On that subject it is possible to retrace – without any claim to completeness – a number of the stages that mark the process of growth and differentiation in scientific work directed at the Alps.

Some of the first evidence of research themes focused on the study of the region can be traced back to 1807, with a scientific contest launched by the *Société Helvétique des Sciences Naturelles* (Bonardi, 2004), which was concerned about obvious glacial advance and the risks it posed. Really from this moment in time research concentrated upon the formation of a 'glacial theory' in order to give a sense of the morphology of the glaciated areas: moraines, erratic masses, and rounded rocks became objects of scientific observation and fundamental evidence through which the theory of the ice ages took form, thanks to the works of Ignaz Venetz and Louis Agassiz. The Alps thus first became a place of scientific enquiry and – in time – a centre from which the ideas tested here were spread throughout the world. The Alpine region is an open book on the geological history of the planet, gathered in the heart of, from the viewpoint of scientific activity, its most energetic continent.

If the formation of glacial theory remains the first fruit of a scientific programme born and developed in the Alps, it is certainly not an isolated case limited to two of the great figures of the history of science, but was quickly interwoven with other disciplines and other scholars. Eduard Richter's studies on the glaciology and morphology of the High Alps are in this sense a perfect example of the growth of the relationship between scientists and the Alpine environment. Richter worked on analysing the forms of the high-altitude landscape in order to reconstruct a 'morpho-history' of the Alps, revealing the coeval evidence of the effects of much more ancient glacial processes. In particular, Richter's studies on the formation, erosion and conservation of cirque glaciers was widely received among the intellectual circles of the early twentieth century<sup>3</sup>, just as a fundamental interest in constructing a systematic knowledge-base of the Alps' high environments can be inferred from his wider studies – linked to a succession of different geomorphological and environmental features rising up the Alpine slopes. From a published report at the start of the 20th century by the geographer Olinto Marinelli we can see how Debarbieux's 'paradigm of verticality' was already evident in Richter's research:

---

<sup>3</sup> In the scientific panorama of the early nineteenth century, at least in Italy, the spread of scientific culture appeared in the journal, *In Alto*, of the *Società Alpina Friulana* where many contributions from the international scientific world were published.

*The height at which one can begin to speak of a high mountain varies from region to region and is closely linked to meteoric erosion action (parietal erosion) which can only happen on bare rock; that is, rock that is not covered by a layer of vegetation. A middle-sized mountain is therefore one covered by vegetation (particularly arboreal), whereas the high mountain is uncovered, of bare rock. The boundary between the two mountain regions varies with the latitudes and the different meteoric conditions of the individual mountain systems<sup>4</sup>. (Marinelli, 1901, p.12)*

Richter's studies and interpretations were therefore aimed not only at searching for the typical forms of landscapes of different altitudes, but also at tracing their limits, at breaking down the complexity of the mountain environment into subsets with consistent characteristics, while also indicating their possible variations. It is interesting to note how Marinelli himself, at the beginning of his own commentary on the work of Austrian glaciology, made clear the necessity for a fresh approach to this work for the benefit of the mountaineering community (Marinelli, 1901, p.3), indirectly showing the community scale of the Alps' fact-finding mission, which involved not only academics but also practising amateurs in a scientific dialogue not dissimilar to the formative one at the same period in Germany around the botanical exploration of the *Hercynia*<sup>5</sup>. With this in mind, through further reports the existence of an established scientific community is clear, interested in explaining the effects of altitude on the natural environment in all its facets. Arrigo Lorenzi had already shown, two years before Marinelli, how the same paradigm of a study linked to verticality was not only glaciological and geomorphological but was made up of other sciences. He provided examples of various research studies, including his own, that proved there were definite limits of altitudinal distribution of living organisms and how such limits – although subject to a general law – always tended to show a certain level of variability. Lorenzo – and the scientists cited by him – was actually stating a law already formulated by Richter in a geomorphological field on a different testing ground, that of biology:

*The altitudinal, physical and biological boundaries in the Alps are in general highest in the central regions, higher than in the peripheral regions, which are lower<sup>6</sup>. (Lorenzi, 1899, p.3)*

---

<sup>4</sup> 'L'altezza a cui si può incominciare a parlare di alta montagna è varia da regione a regione e sta appunto in rapporto con l'azione erosiva meteorica (erosione parietale) la quale può esercitarsi soltanto sopra le rocce scoperte; e tali sono quelle non ricoperte da uno spesso manto vegetale. Montagna media è adunque quella ricoperta da vegetazione (specialmente arborea), alta montagna quella spoglia, delle nude rocce. Il limite tra le due regioni orografiche varia con le latitudini e con le diverse condizioni meteoriche dei singoli sistemi montuosi.'

<sup>5</sup> This case refers to the mapping of Germany coordinated by Oscar Drude from 1902, in which the academic botanist involved various amateur enthusiasts in a phytogeography project aimed at identifying the botanical regions in which lay the *Hercynia* (a place name of Latin origin recovered by the *Heimat* movement). Both the involvement of a group of observers in the land and the adoption of a term linked to a popular movement bent on rediscovering the roots of coeval Germany indicate the scientist's interest in addressing a much wider interested community than the narrow scientific-academic one. Unlike the observations of Richter and Marinelli, Drude's ended by being absorbed into a much stronger process of construction of identity and regionalization. Cf. Güttler N., *Mapping Heimat*, in De Bont R., Lachmund J., 2017.

<sup>6</sup> 'I limiti altimetrici, fisici e biologici, nelle Alpi, sono in generale più elevati nelle regioni centrali, più alte che in quelle periferiche, più basse.'

Among the examples given by Lorenzi, the studies carried out in the field of vegetation by the Swiss botanists Heer, Stebler and Schröter stand out, as do the observations on fauna by the zoologist Friedrich Zschokke, also Swiss, all eminent personalities in the scientific panorama of the early 20th century who are an integral part of a trans-national community formed around the study of the characteristics of verticality as a founding principle.

If the dominant scientific position seems clear from the accounts given here, having developed independently through the course of scientific enquiry into Alpine conditions, a further step towards understanding the growth of scientific knowledge in all its complexity can be made simply by widening our observation to regions outside the Alps and showing how paradigms, scientific methods, and practices were already able to circulate in different geographical situations. The Alpine community is one of several active scientific communities committed to developing explanatory theories on the complexity of the natural environment. Since the Alpine scientific community belongs to a wider circle that is already to some extent interconnected, it receives information emanating from outside which is then adapted to its own context. Research studies on the boundaries of species' spatial distribution are certainly not new in the scientific panorama, which back to the time of Humboldt's explorations have shown consistent threads of interest in the subject. The study of plant and animal distribution became a central element in the new science of ecology and developed into a fundamental subject in American ecology following Clinton Hart Merriam's research on *Life zone theory*, further developed by Joseph Grinnell<sup>7</sup>. The influences of the new discipline on the Alpine region were not however limited to basing it simply on the paradigm of verticality, but encouraged a push towards new subjects of research. The theory formulated by the Darwinist Ernst Haeckel directed the scientific community's attention for the first time towards the study of the relationships between living organisms and their environments (Keller and Golley, 2000). In his inaugural lecture at the University of Jena he defined with the term 'ecology':

*'the body of knowledge concerning the economy of nature – the investigation of the total relations of the animal both to its inorganic and to its organic environment; including, above all, its friendly and inimical relations with those animals and plants with which it comes directly or indirectly into contact – in a word, ecology is the study of all those complex relations referred to by Darwin as the conditions of the struggle for existence'* (Stauffer, 1957, p. 141)

---

<sup>7</sup> Merriam's and Grinnell's research made a deep impression on North American ecology, especially that of the western coast. The *life zone theory* conceived by Merriam was then used by Grinnell as a principle for the mapping of life forms in a survey carried out in the Yosemite National Park. Temperature played a central role in the theory and was seen by Merriam as a fundamental independent variable in determining the geographical distribution of living beings. The theory, which found important regional confirmation in Grinnell's applications of it, was widely circulated in the scientific community, but its conceptual and empirical limits were then highlighted when it was applied to different contexts from those in which it was conceived. The chequered history of LZT indicates on the one hand the capacity of scientific research to circulate within wide communities in terms of numbers and geography, while on the other it highlights the role played by the region and regionalism in the construction of ecological paradigms (Neumann R.P., 2017, pp.37-51).

Haeckel's paradigm met with considerable academic success, leading to the spread of the science of ecology into all the major European and North American universities. The figure of Karl Möbius appears as a central element in the development of ecological enquiries, thanks to his formulation of the concept of *biocoenosis*. Möbius' observations, directed to the study of banks of oysters in different geographical contexts, – from the seabed of Schleswig-Holstein to the estuaries of English rivers – drew attention to the idea of 'community ecology', based upon the co-presence in the same environment of more populations belonging to different species, linked to each other by functional relationships. Ecology still lacked a definition, and so of scientific attention structured for a programme of research towards such a community (Möbius, 1881, p.723). The concepts of biocoenosis and interspecific relationships between different populations became central to ecological research, providing a pattern for interpreting the complexity of the environment and at the same time an interpretative paradigm. At this moment in history ecology adopted the aim of describing living communities and their relationships, a mission which would be followed, with several variations in its formulation, up until the paradigmatic revolution of Arthur Tansley and the introduction of the idea of *ecosystems*.

Against the background of Möbius' theory, the Swiss botanist Carl Schröter, whom we mentioned above, was carrying out his own research in the Alps. Continuing the theory of biocoenosis, in 1902 he introduced into the literature the term *synecology* to identify that thread of study which was not only concerned with examining the relationships between organisms and environment – the field of *autoecology* derived from Haeckel – but with the relationships between different communities of organisms and their environment. Schröter therefore concentrated upon the systematic classification of the Alpine flora and paid particular attention to the description of the phenomenon of ecological *succession*, consisting of the gradual transformations that occur within biocoenosis themselves, which – according to the interpretation of the botanist Frederic Clements – tended towards a state of optimum ecology termed *climax* (Kupper 2014). From an epistemological viewpoint, the study of spatial variability of the Alpine environments was thus enriched on the temporal level, while the attention of Alpine research was centred for the first time upon the functional relationships between different elements, accomplishing a fundamental step towards the affirmation of Debarbieux's second paradigm, that of the *mountain as a spatial system*. Schröter's studies found practical expression in the newly born interests in the conservation of the natural environment, with the founding in 1916 of the Swiss National Park, which represented a unique case in the world panorama at the time of its foundation, in contrast to Yellowstone Park for the central importance of scientific knowledge in the conservation aims adopted. Carl Schröter was entrusted here, together with Friedrich Zschokke, with the task of drawing up assessments of the ecological needs of the area to be protected, at that time identified between Val Cluozza and Val S-Charl in Engadina. Once the area for protection had been established, the fundamental influence in constructing a research

agenda remained in the hands of Swiss botanists. Schröter applied his own research perspective to the park, seeking, paradoxically, to show that without human intervention the succession would basically be 'evolved in reverse', restoring pre-anthropogenic biocoenosis. The park was a site of observation for him to prove his own hypotheses, an experiment in *rewilding anter litteram* in which to verify several conjectures that remained too dependent on theory rather than long-term empirical evidence (Kupper, 2014). For the first time, the Alps were home to an open-air laboratory in which to test ecological theories, whose value could be a resource for observing Nature's behaviour in a space segregated from human influence. The park formalized the natural sciences' need for a physical space in which they might justify their own work by guaranteeing the integrity and consistency of their observations, in imitation of laboratory sciences and the scientific and experimental paradigms that the latter had constructed in the 19th century (Livingstone, 2003; Kupper 2014).

In this way, as the Swiss National Park took on the role of a laboratory for the study of the Alpine environment, the whole region gradually assumed a similar role for the study of natural, and to a lesser extent socio-anthropological, phenomena in mountain contexts throughout the world from the 1970s. The history of science in the Alps is not just a history of ideas, but also a history of the birth and development of the institutions concerned with science in the 20th and 21st centuries. In this sense the foundation in 1912 of the *Institut de Géographie Alpine* at Grenoble represents an important step in the institutionalization of research. In 1925 the Institute's scientific work was already branching out in a variety of different research interests, which embraced physical and human geography, confined on the whole to the national boundaries. Historical accounts tell of an authoritative institution, at once constituting a model for the scientific exploration of the Alpine situation:

*Much still remains for the French to do before they can complete a picture that summarizes the natural and human conditions in their Alps: but the great love that they sustain for their mountains, the tenacity with which the relevant studies are begun and conducted to the end allow us to hope that in the not so distant future the Alps will have given up even their most recondite secrets to the eyes of these passionate enquirers. The Government, administrations, citizens, all are working with faith and enthusiasm on the Alpine problem and numerous journals (...) are competing to publish articles and findings, while the Revue de Géographie Alpine publishes every year a complete bibliographical review on the Alps<sup>8</sup>. (Landi, 1925, pp. 8-9).*

---

<sup>8</sup> 'Molto resta ancora da fare ai francesi prima che possano giungere ad un quadro sintetico delle condizioni naturali ed umane delle loro Alpi: ma l'amore grande che essi nutrono per le loro montagne, la tenacia con cui gli studi relativi vengono iniziati e condotti a termine fanno sperare che in un'epoca non lontana le Alpi avranno svelato anche i loro più reconditi segreti agli occhi degli appassionati indagatori. Governo, amministrazioni, cittadini, tutti si occupano con fede ed entusiasmo del problema alpino e numerose riviste (...) vanno a gara nel pubblicare articoli e lavori, mentre la Revue de Géographie Alpine pubblica ogni anno una rassegna bibliografica completa relativa alle Alpi.'

Among the many scientific activities promoted by the new research institutions in the 1920s and 1930s is included the project of surveying the glaciological data. The link between glacial spread and climatic variations was certainly not unknown, but now for the first time the idea was voiced of monitoring the variations in the ice-fronts not only on the wide climatic scale – in order to explain the main causes of high altitude morphology – but on the annual meteorological scale, with the aim of observing close up the short-term behaviour of the glacial systems<sup>9</sup>. In this context are seen the many regular Italian accounts published by Umberto Monterin in the *Bollettino Glaciologico Italiano* (Monterin, 1925-1935). Further, in a special publication, Monterin tackled the subject of the historical fluctuations of the treeline, on the basis of a spruce trunk recovered after the retreat of the Verra glacier in Val d'Ayas. Monterin not only resumed contact with the wide temporal scales of the scientific community's first contacts with glaciology, but also part of the paradigm of verticality, which became associated with the study of natural climatic variations. In the publication in question he speculated on the origin of the find, hypothesizing that it was part of a forest that could be localized at least three hundred metres higher than the site of the find. This therefore was evidence of a warmer past in which the arboreal line was much higher, allowing with a fine margin of confidence the dating of the growth of the tree, ascribed to the 17th century. This agreed with observations made by Venetz in Vallese on the altitudinal limit of the cherry tree more than a century earlier (Monterin, 1936, p.23). In the systematic nature of Monterin's observations, notes and study methods we can today trace the precursors of the advent of modern climate sciences, which were also to be applied to the study of situations geographically far from the Alps.

The metaphor of the Alps-laboratory was consolidated in the following years and gained full recognition in the 1950s and 60s with the development of different scientific traditions in European universities (Scheurer, Sgard, 2008, p.29). They saw in the Alps a concrete possibility of observing different environments on a scale that was spatially limited and clearly definable, and this led to a proliferation of studies in the fields of botany, geomorphology and soil science. The Alps became a model for scientific research in the world's mountain contexts, used both as a source of terminology in comparative research and as a database of evidence for the development of study methodology. The increase in the volumes of scientific work on themes linked to the Alps was to be one of the greatest growth phenomena in the scientific communities of Europe and North America, which in the years after the Second World War saw constant growth and at the same time increasing specialization of disciplines; this gradual transition led – in the words of the scientist Derek de Solla Price – from a situation of *little science* to one of *big science* (De Solla Price, 1963), and in this the Alpine region was no exception. In the Alps the transition not only

---

<sup>9</sup> Incidentally, the beginning of this practice also marks the start of the collection of indirect, or proxy, data, which was to become fundamental for the climatic reconstructions which have become a central element in the 21-st century climatology scientific community.



consisted of an increase in the number of scientists involved in the processes of increasing scientific knowledge but also of the beginning of thematic convergence with other regions. This was actually a regional phenomenon endowed with connections to the wider international context, and the birth of 'Alpine research' accompanied the rise of environmental problems, cutting across every attempt at regionalization, that characterized the 20th century. With the 1960s research was systematized around common focal points, starting with the Unesco programme *Man and the Biosphere*, launched in 1971. The programme set out to provide a common scientific approach to environmental problems, including in the Alps (Scheurer, Sgard, 2008, p.30), and to spread themes of an environmental nature beyond the scientific context, moving into a political sphere. The internationalization of research in an environmental field followed the adoption of the ecological paradigm and sustainable development, which became imperative after the Rio de Janeiro Earth Summit of 1992, which was to act as a benchmark in the years following for the explosion of interest in the relationship between the human community and the environment, influenced both by science and environmental policies. In the Alps as well, Rio – particularly with the formulation of the *Mountain Agenda* – had an effect, together with the newly formed Convention of the Alps, underwritten by the member states in 1991. In 1999 the creation of the *International Scientific Committee on Research in the Alps* (ISCAR) sanctioned the definitive creation of a permanent network of scientific partners working in the Alps, under the aegis of the Committee, with the aim of carrying out interdisciplinary research work in a transalpine framework, so actually completing the process of institutionalization of scientific practice at a regional level.

In this context of strong structuring of research, the Alps – and more widely, the mountain – gave yet more force to its role of the 'region-laboratory', directed to the study of the processes of socio-economic development in their relationship with the erosion of natural capital and to the definition of both trans- and inter-disciplinary approaches (Brun, Perrin, 2002, p.32). In tandem with the growth of participation and the creation of different institutions of scientific coordination, from the 1960s interest in environmental transformations gained prominence inside the scientific community, not only from the perspective of a regional study but, in agreement with that theorized by Debarbieux, also from the perspective of the construction of a scientific paradigm which studied the Alps as *an indicator of global change*. Topics linked to the limits of development were already central to the scientific agenda from both the publication of The Club of Rome's *The limits of growth* and debates linked to the accidental products of such growth, a course of enquiry that was to be gradually strengthened as the century advanced. The Alps, in response to the global crisis, assumed the dimension of a place for protecting the natural heritage of Europe, a situation recognized by the adoption in communications of general public interest by the different European bodies of the metaphor of the *water tower of Europe* – a reference to the Alps' capacity to 'produce' drinking water – and of the *hotspot* (CIPRA) – a reference in this case to the region's

high levels of biodiversity. Linked to these salient characteristics of the Alpine region, a thread of specific research grew in importance from the mid-1980s to the first decade of the 21st century, connected to a crisis situation perceived on a global scale: climate change.

## 2. CLIMATE CHANGE IN THE ALPS AND SCIENTIFIC RESEARCH

From the emergence of scientific interest in the Alpine ranges, and certainly not just in the last thirty years, climate and its changes have assumed a central role in the unfolding of scientific research in the region. From Venetz' first hypotheses in his study of the glaciers, climate research in the Alpine region has known various levels of interest and has changed the position taken for reading changes in the climate – from the paradigm of verticality to that of the region uncovering a global change – gradually structured around central institutions whose interest from a geographical viewpoint transcends the Alpine region. The *Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change* (IPCC), founded in 1988 within the *United Nations Environment Programme* (UNEP), has a key role in the collection, review and evaluation of research on climate change, without, however, undertaking it directly, a prerogative that remains independent of the central institution (Bonardi, Toluoso, 2017). Climate science, which is autonomous in terms of the choice of its direction, methods and research objectives, has two principal directions if analysed from a spatial viewpoint: the modeling of the global climate system (*Global Circulation Models*) and the regional study of the climate, not without reciprocal interactions, as indicated by the large volume of literature dedicated to the downscaling of GCM (Global Climate Model) data into regional forecasting models. In the present study only climate research of a regional type will be considered, with particular reference to the Alps.

The Alps represent, for students of climate and its dependent phenomena, one of the most interesting regions on the planet. From a purely climatological viewpoint, the incidence of climate change in the region is more intense and more easily identifiable: the average increase in temperature here is almost double the global average (European Environment Agency 2010, p.7). The Alps are not only characterized by a strong climatic-environmental gradient, origin of the vast specific biodiversity and ecosystem, but are also host to a variety of cultures and production systems. They are therefore a region of special interest for the study of the impact of climate on the biomass and on hydrological and glaciological dynamics, and indeed on the possibilities of adaptation for the human communities settled in lands that are ecologically fragile. Interest in the influence of climate in the Alps is not restricted to purely scientific fields, but has carved itself a space in the institutional discourse of the larger NGOs

working in the Alpine region<sup>10</sup>. In fact the converging interests of science and politics in the region on the one hand lead to a new dialectics between the Alps and central localities of continental Europe, and on the other cause an increase in scientific interest in this most iconic European range of mountains. The study of climate has seen a gradual growth of interest from the 1990s and in particular in the first years of the 21st century. The course of scientific production can be monitored today by analysis of the major research databases. By considering the number of articles published annually and shown in the Web of Science database<sup>11</sup> (figure I.1), the temporal development of data indicates a small increase, which reflects the growth of the topic's prominence within the wider public discussion<sup>12</sup>.

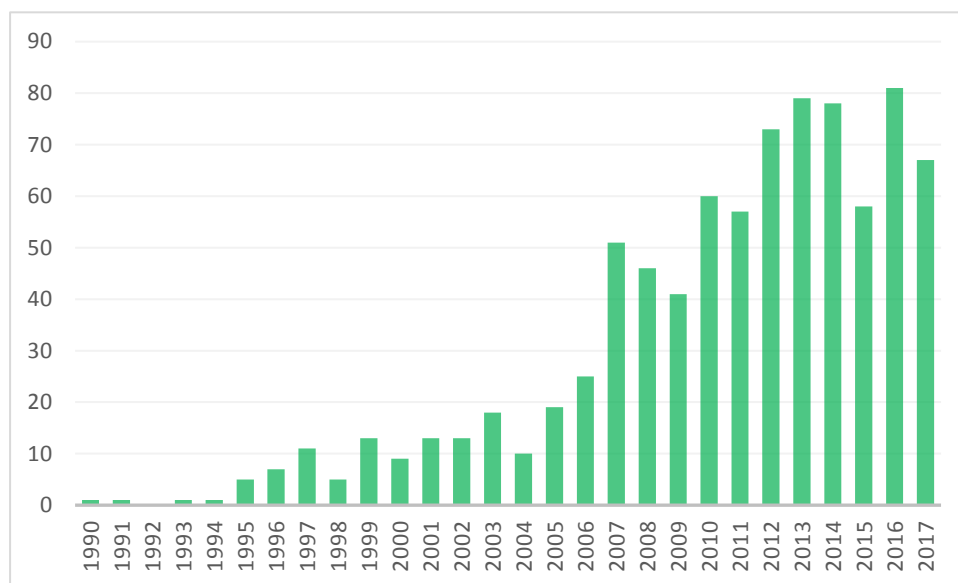


Figure I.1 Research on climate change in the Alps. The number of articles published by year. Derived by the author from Web of Science data. Search terms: TS=(climate change) AND TI=(Alps)<sup>1</sup>. .

<sup>10</sup> Note the important volume of documents produced by CIPRA and the WWF intended for public communication and widely based upon a metaphoric representation of the environmental characteristics of the Alpine region.

<sup>11</sup> The choice of the Web of Science database rather than other potential research digital archives is dictated by the greater number of titles shown – in the full database and in the specific case dealt with in the present study – and by the possibility of, with relative ease, using the metadata interface with specific software developed for handling vast volumes of data. By combining the needs of analysis of a wide spectrum with the need to process the data with third party analysis tools, the Web of Science shows itself to be the choice of best performance.

<sup>12</sup> The search string used was shown to be the most reliable from the perspective of representation of the field. The acronym TS (*topic subject*) is a metadata generic selection command, with which the algorithm will search through any article indicating an equivalent value (TS=X) among the fields of title, abstract, keywords, author. The acronym TI (*title*) represents on the other hand the title and so is targeted at a single field, equated to an explicit value ("TI=X"). The choice of the string "TS=" *climate change* AND "TI=" *Alps*" underlies the necessity of explaining the setting of the research in the title. A string with broader conditions of validity (i.e. TS= "*Climate Change*" AND TS= "*Alps*") will return misleading indications around the central nature of the Alpine area in its treatment, including also publications in which the word 'Alps' appears only in the abstract because of tangential references. Moreover, a result characterized by the use of the adjective 'Alpine' rather than the noun 'Alps' would considerably alter the field's representative sampling by including publications using the adjective not in a strictly topographical way, but nominating all those phenomena in the eponymous climatic-vegetation zones, so including all the mountain ranges on the planet. Even although the solution found here could impose strict restrictions on the criteria of selection, it remains, in the opinion of the author, the most appropriate for using a technological tool devised and constructed for handling vast amounts of data. The exclusion of a number of publications that would be legitimately included according to different and more searching criteria is a workable compromise, given the risk of including in the field a significant number of records not pertaining to the scope of the research.

Interest in the climate grew gradually from the end of the 1990s until 2006, then rapidly to become central to discussion in the scientific community studying the Alps, with 2007 seeing a striking increase in productivity. From 2012 the number of publications has been above 60 three times, only in 2015 dipping below 50, and with the highest number, of 81, in 2016. In the same way the data on citations found in the literature show similar behaviour on an annual scale, indicating a growing scientific community and sustained advance in their research programmes.

From a spatial perspective, it is interesting to note how the Alpine region is today more studied – in relation to the state of the climate and its consequences – than the other major mountain ranges in the world (figure I.2)

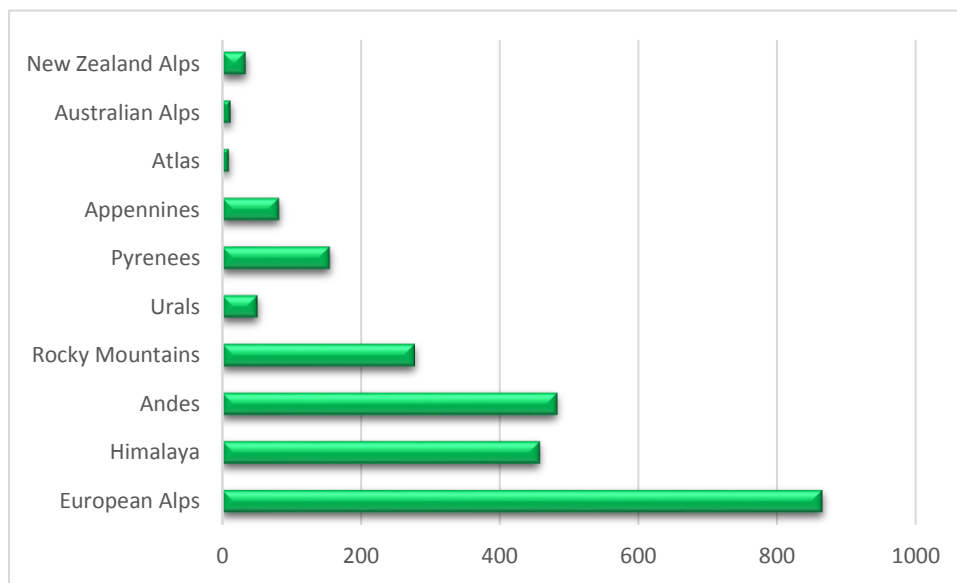


Figure I.2 Number of scientific articles on climate change by geographical area. Web of Science data. Search terms TS=(climate change) AND TI=(\*geographical area)

It is not difficult to read in the data historical continuity of the role of the region-laboratory, which still today represents is the preferred setting for scientific research in mountain contexts, which, however, to be fully understood need to be regarded as relative within the context of the database being examined. Considering the size of the entire database the number of publications produced in Europe are greater than in any other macro-region, including other large geographical areas with a long scientific tradition or comparable investment in academic programmes, such as China and USA-Canada. The majority of titles centred on the principal mountain range of the European continent is also linked to the geographical sources of research production in mountain contexts, assuming that research conducted in European universities still maintains their preference for the Alps – purely through scientific interest or because of the cost in approaching more distant mountain ranges.

Moving our attention to the analysis of data on the growth of annual citations in the scientific literature (figure I.3) a comparable picture is found, with values of constant increase since 2004 and an even greater linear trend than the publications.

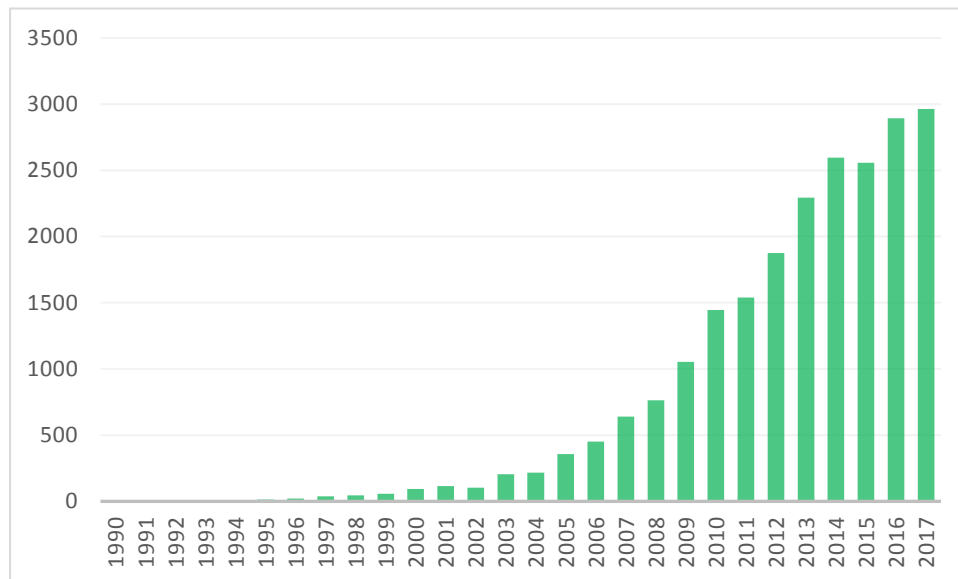


Figure I.3 Research on climate change in the Alps. Number of articles cited by year. Drawn by the author from Web of Science data.

Climatic research in an Alpine environment is accumulating and becoming a real research programme; the number of citations is growing hand in hand with the publications and exhibiting an increasingly marked positive trend. The analysis of citations adds a new dimension to the qualitative data since it brings together the different publications, by describing not only how much scientific discourse has grown in raw terms but also how much individual articles are linked to form a discussion within the community. In this sense, the parallel growth of the two parameters can be considered a strong indicator of the state of health of climate research in the Alps, which is constantly gaining in importance in the wider scientific panorama. Even though the raw quantitative data illustrated already to some extent explains the subject's ability to assert itself in the panorama of Alpine research, the scientific production considered here cannot be thought of as homogeneous: climate change constitutes a theme of convergent interest for a plurality of disciplines and institutional subjects, with their own objects of research, methods and tools of enquiry. A further step, needed to understand the subject's development dynamics, should necessarily break down the data into different categories, widening the quantitative analysis and incorporating a qualitative dimension. Enquiry into what the research community into

Alpine climate change consists of and what is specifically studied are two necessary stages for entering this path. For this purpose a useful tool is once again provided by the Web of Science database, this time through a deeper – and in a certain sense cartographic – analysis. Beginning with the quantitative data illustrated and already analysed, it is then possible to draw maps that trace the functional relationships between the data, called *network maps*, in order to extract information given through algorithms of *text mining*<sup>13</sup>. From the epistemological perspective network maps are constructed around two fundamentals: nodes and connections. One entity corresponds to each node; the entity can be the name of an author, a term frequently used in the literature, a research institution, or a nation state. The size of the nodes is directly proportional to the number of occurrences of the term, or entity, associated with them: intuitively the larger nodes correspond to the terms more frequently found in the corpus under examination. The connections, on the other hand, determine the co-occurrence of two terms, linked by a line; in this case there is a direct relationship to the actual number of co-occurrences of the connecting terms, indicated by the width of the link line. Apart from these basics, the maps allow information to be organized on a further level, by the division of terms into specific *clusters*, which group together families of closely linked terms, since they tend to co-occur more often. By thus summarising briefly the rules for a correct interpretation of the network maps, we can attempt to answer the first question: who works on climatic research in the Alps?

---

<sup>13</sup> The term indicates the application of techniques of *data mining* (extraction of data) to a corpus of literature not necessarily structured. The aim of the application of these algorithms is the identification of pattern relationships, either temporal or spatial, which are difficult to identify through direct reading of the documents processed.

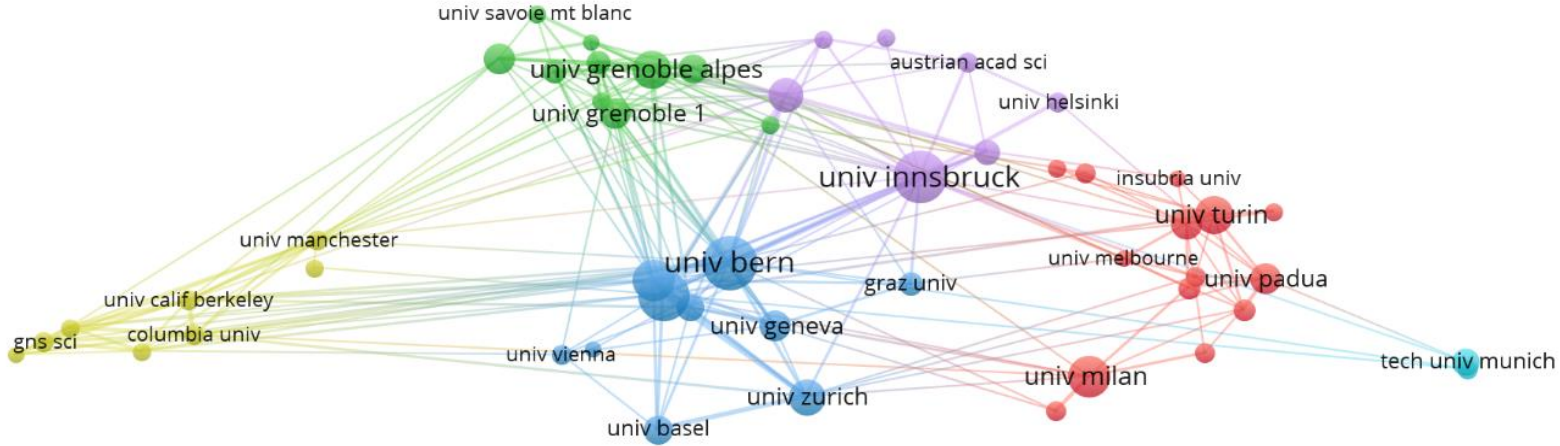


Figure I.4 Network map of the research institutions involved in the reference dataset. Visualization through a network map. Developed by the author from Web of Science data 1985-2017, visualization VOS viewer. WOS search terms: TS=(climate change) AND TI=(Alps)

From the visualization given in Figure I.4 a number of interesting descriptors on the panorama of research emerge. The network of connections is dense and highlights how the construction of scientific knowledge is a process shared among different research institutions. We can therefore identify determinate spatial characteristics of the scientific network:

1. *(Macro)regional interest*: the research organizations mapped here, in the majority of cases, are established in the Alpine region or its immediate surroundings. There is a smaller cluster countering the norm which groups together a number of institutions from outside the Alpine region who have built study inter-relationships with the region. In the same way, isolated non-European institutions are distributed inside other clusters, although the relative weight of literature produced by these organizations remains small compared to the total volume of the dataset.
2. *Production-connection relationship*: in general the relationship between the number of scientific articles produced and the number of connections that the institutions have with other institutions tends to be positive. From this it can be assumed that the larger and more productive research institutions are also the most connected. In spite of this basic assumption, there are obviously individual cases which run counter to the overwhelming trend. The behaviour of the two variables is best described by Figure I.5

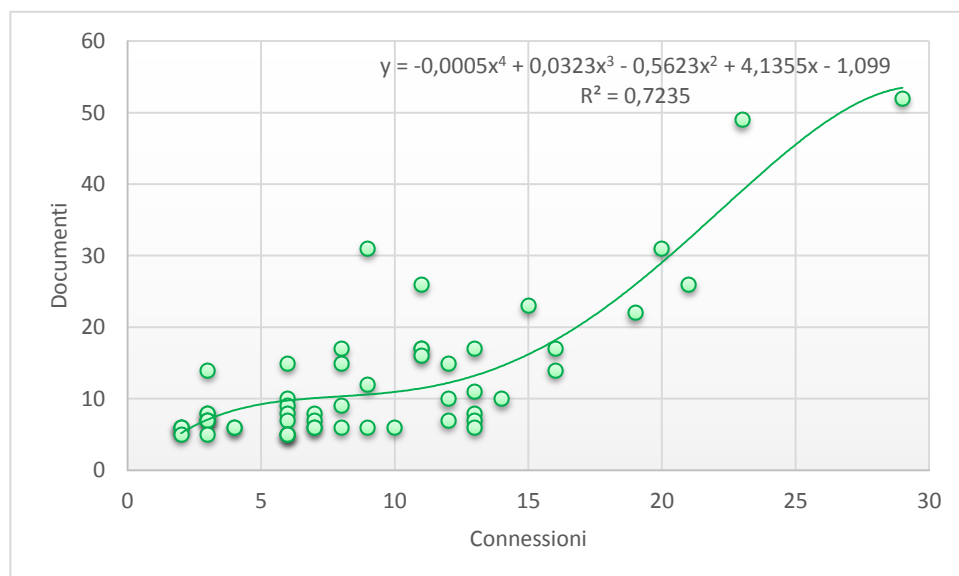


Figure I.5 Number of documents associated with each research institution compared to the number of scientific inter-connections. Developed by the author from Web of Science data network VOS viewer.

3. *Pseudo-national cluster*: although the clusters identified can be superimposed on the national scientific production of the different Alpine countries, a closer look shows how the subdivision is not rigorous and inside pseudo-national clusters there are sometimes hidden institutions belonging to other



countries. The case of Austria is the most obvious in this sense since the cluster that contains the most national institutions (violet) also includes the University of Helsinki, but excludes the Universities of Vienna and Graz, actually breaking up the national unity of the part of the dataset under consideration. The case of the WSL Institute is also interesting since it has inter-connections beyond Switzerland. No less worthy of attention is the concentration of connections between Swiss universities and research centres and German speaking and Francophone institutions. Huggins and Thompson (2017) have highlighted how the connections of geographical proximity contribute to the spread of knowledge between the nodes of a network and also through channels that cannot be measured by this type of analysis – face to face discussions and local channels for the spreading of knowledge – and therefore cannot be codified (Huggins R., Thompson P., 2017; p. 528); in the case of the Alpine region, the relatively restricted geographical extent of which is codified in a small network, linguistic affinity can in the same way play a key role in constructing channels of regional (or sub-regional) channels of information.

4. *Non-linear internationalization*: it is not necessarily true that the national connections are more numerous than international ones for every institution. Looking at the major centres (Bern, Innsbruck, Milan, Grenoble, Zurich, WSL), it is easy to see how they frequently strike up international relationships, but a deeper examination of the social behaviour of the secondary institutions highlights very conflicting trends among them, which range from exclusive collaboration with their co-nationals (University of Basle) to the absence of any scientific relationships on research topics within national boundaries (University of Vienna).

By increasing the scale of observation and moving to terms of individual institutions, Figure I.6 illustrates the data of the first ten research institutions shown in the Web of Science.

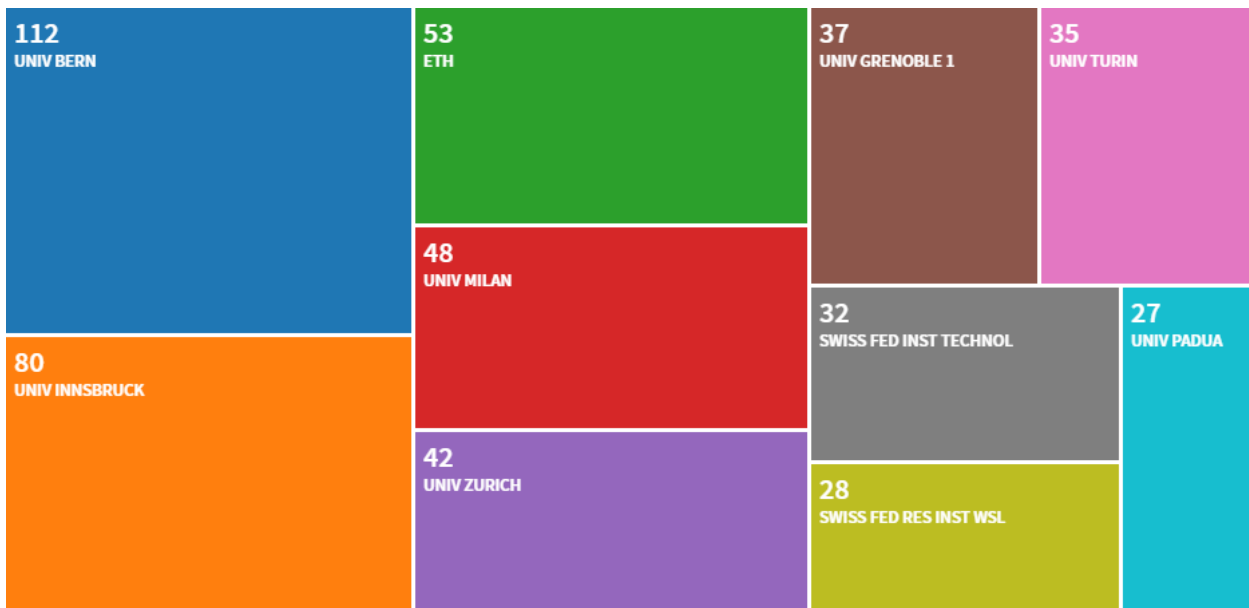


Figure I.6 Tree diagram of the first 10 research institutions included in the dataset. Search terms: TS=(climate change) AND TI=(Alps). Developed by the author from WOS data.

Switzerland has the largest number of research institutes and a majority percentage share of the volume of literature produced, showing a greater average activity among their researchers in the field. This also confirms a trend already highlighted in analysis of the network map, in not showing in the table any localized institution in national contexts other than the Alpine states.

A reply to the second question – what is specifically studied in research into climate change in the Alps – requires a different type of network map, generally known as a *term map*, the merit of which lies in allowing a complete view of the corpus of literature in a facilitated identification of the main research arguments and the citation relationship between the different research trends in the field of study. As far as the nodes go, they represent a single recurrent term from within the volume of literature under examination. The semantic analysis of the lexemes allows a rough identification of the disciplines involved, thereby actually providing a thematic picture of the field examined. The connections, yet again, represent the co-occurrence of the two linked terms.

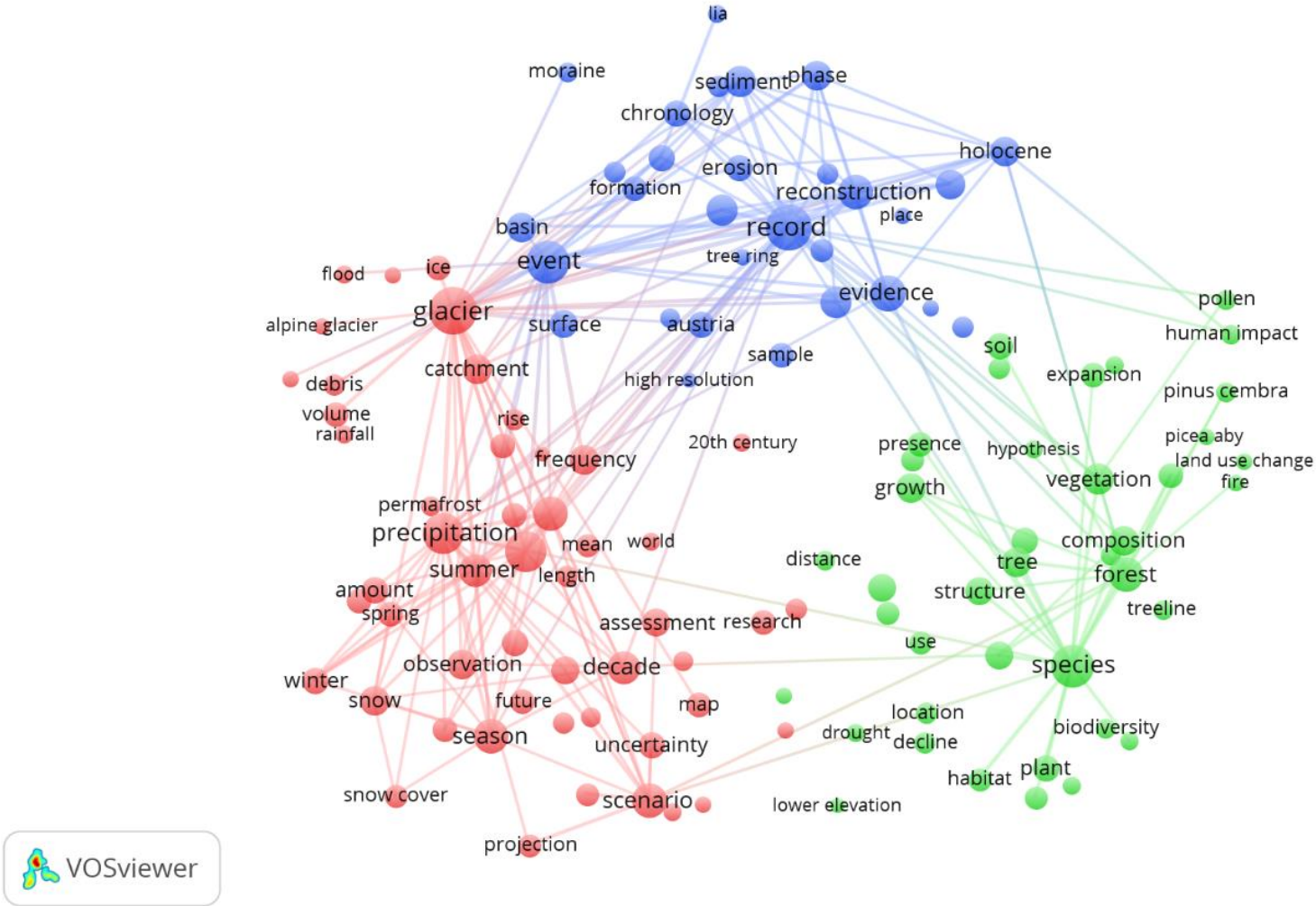


Figure I.7 Thematic distribution of research on climate change in the Alps. Visualization by a network map. Developed by the author from Web of Science data 1985-2017, visualization VOS viewer. WOS search terms TS=(climate change) AND TI=(Alps). VOS filtre: 30 items.

The map reproduced in Figure I.7 considers the literature produced from 1985 to 2017 on the subject of climate change in the Alps. It results in a clear tripartite division, with one cluster linked to ecological-biogeographical terms (green), one focused on climatological and paleo-climatological analyses (blue), and finally a large cluster around the subjects of glaciology and measurements of snow and rainfall. The division into these three clusters does not suggest that the disciplines involved in the research have been unequivocally identified, but has the aim of understanding which themes the scientific community is turning their attention to in relation to the study of climate change. The thematic sub-division is therefore useful for organising a more detailed review of the existing literature, no longer with a kind of *distant reading*<sup>14</sup> approach, but by directly analysing the publications most cited among those identified in the Web of science database (*close reading*), in such a way as to define what the state of the art is in the different thinkings on research on climate change. By following the schema given by the network map shown in figure I.7, the climatological characteristics of global warming in an Alpine context can be analysed, so as then to allow attention to concentrate on the consequences for the biotic (green) and abiotic (red) environment.

### 3. HOW IS THE ALPINE CLIMATE CHANGING?

#### 3.1 A NECESSARY PREMISE: THE SPATIAL VARIABILITY

Variability is one of the main characteristics of the climatic system, on both the spatial and temporal levels. Although it constituted a central topic of research in the past, the synchronic study of the Alpine climate's spatial characteristics has given way to the study of temporal evolution, which has become a priority due to emergence of the phenomenon of global warming<sup>15</sup>. Yet the spatial dimension of climatic variability has a fundamental role in best understanding the reason for the emergence of climatic research in the Alps.

In all mountainous regions, climatic variability within the area is intuitively influenced by the altitudinal gradient between the valley bottoms and the mountain peaks, but this can only offer an approximate interpretation of what is in reality a much more complex system. It is possible to identify four principal factors that regulate the climate: the continental nature, latitude, altitude, and topography (Beniston, 2006, pp. 4-5). Continental nature refers to the proximity of a given region to the ocean, which

---

<sup>14</sup> By the term *distant reading* is meant the particular approach of literary analysis which is based upon statistics – tests of hypotheses, computer modelling and quantitative analyses – and not on the traditional approach based on direct reading of the texts that are part of the specific literature on an argument.

<sup>15</sup> If the temporal dimension has become a cornerstone of research in the Alpine context, the spatial dimension is by contrast linked to an ancillary role, normally of the creation of future forecast models through statistical techniques.

regulates its daily and annual temperature range, much more stable in oceanic climates due to the warming capacity of the sea, which also acts as a source of humidity and hence of rainfall. The continental mountain ranges enjoy greater exposure to sunlight, less precipitation, and more marked ranges of temperature. To a large extent latitude determines the extent of the annual temperature cycle and – to a lesser extent – of precipitation, while altitude plays a fundamental role in mountain climates, since atmospheric density, pressure, and temperature fall with the rise in elevation. Temperatures reach lower temperatures in response to the decrease in the atmosphere's thermal capacity as height increases, so exerting a strong influence on the ecosystem distributions.

In the specific case of the Alps, Bätzing identified four fundamental patterns for climate variations in the area, linked to the hypsometric variation, variation between margins and central Alpine areas, and latitudinal and longitudinal variation (Bätzing, 2003, pp. 52-55). As in every other mountain context, temperatures tend to drop with the increase in height, in parallel with the thinning of the atmospheric stratum and so heightened radiation. The hypsometric variation is the only constant in the spatial variability of the Alpine climate and only meets with exceptions in the phenomenon of temperature inversion found in certain valley bottoms or basins embedded in longitudinal valleys, where masses of cold air are unable to rise up the slopes, trapped by masses of much lighter warm air, leading to the formation of a thin cloud layer. The variations between areas on the Alpine margins and those in the central Alpine region is linked to the position of Atlantic or Mediterranean influxes, which tend to rise and download their accumulated humidity once they meet mountainous obstacles. Because of this the pre-Alpine regions tend to be wetter and colder than the internal areas, which exhibit continental traits, with low precipitation and strong sunshine, leading to wide daily and annual temperature ranges. In parallel to the two patterns identified, latitudinal variation influences the distribution of microclimates. The Alps act as a barrier between a Mediterranean climate to the south and a temperate-cold climate to the north, resulting in a notable difference in temperature – with the southern slopes decidedly warmer and with higher rainfall levels. The phenomenon is also found on a local scale, with higher temperatures recorded on slopes exposed to the south compared to those otherwise oriented. Finally, longitudinal variation determines the gradual transition between an oceanic climate to the west and a more continental one in the eastern sectors of the Alpine ranges. The greater humidity of the western Alps compared to the eastern results from this difference, even if the effect is mitigated by the influence of the Mediterranean, which channels humid air across the Carnic and Julian Alps, reaching the high and low *Tauern* in Austria.

The crossing of all the spatial patterns described is the origin of the wide range of microclimates that characterize the Alpine region. In Bätzing's words:

[...] *in describing the climatic condition of the Alps the problem lies in the fact that the regular elements, clearly identifiable, are on their own insignificant: the conditions are so complex and change so gradually inside the vast Alpine region that in the final analysis we can say that each valley has its own climate*<sup>16</sup>. (2003, p.52)

It is no surprise, therefore, that the study and systematic description of the Alpine climate's spatial variations captured the attention of scientists well before the appearance of the phenomena of global climate change. The spatial diversity of the Alpine climate is, in any case, one of the main factors in the development of its specific biodiversity and the richness of its ecosystems; the climate, therefore, is a subject of interest that transcends the field of climatology, and is not even confined to the realms of ecological and biogeographical sciences.

### 3.2 Temporal variations in the Alpine climate

Climate variability over time is widely studied today, over both the short and long term. The term *reconstruction* has assumed a fundamental role in research on climate in the past, where the behaviour of the variables over time is defined in accordance with the behaviour of climate dependent variables. Historical series of dendrochronological, glaciological and palynological data are common tools of retrospective enquiry, which allow the production of data that precedes the beginning of instrumental observation. The history of climate has therefore been the subject of minute reconstruction and enquiry, which have received both widespread interest and notoriety with the advent of the IPCC and Mann's famous, or notorious, diagram, the best known and most discussed representation of long-term climate variability. In the same way, the emergence of *global warming* – which has also driven the need for studies on a geological scale – is the direct cause of the proliferation of publications on the subject of recent climate change and of increased scientific interest in the subject.

As far as the specific case of the Alps is concerned, studies of climate variations on different time scales are extremely widespread. The reconstructions of long periods highlights how the region has gone through different climatic phases over the last millennium, attributable to the variable nature of the climatic system. Through reconstruction studies based on documentary sources, the history of the climate shows the principal climatic variations that have marked the phases of the Mediaeval Warm Period (MWP) and the following Little Ice Age (LIA), which, for all that they were characterized by definite trends towards warming and cooling respectively, were made up of shorter and uncertain phases which sometime ran counter to their prevailing trend (Bonardi 2004, p. 127). The climatic

---

<sup>16</sup> '[...]nel descrivere la condizione climatica delle Alpi il problema consiste nel fatto che gli elementi di regolarità, chiaramente individuabili, sono di per sé poco significativi: le condizioni sono così complesse e si modificano così gradualmente all'interno della vasta regione alpina, che in ultima istanza si può affermare che ogni valle ha un proprio clima.'

system is characterized by identifiable macro-trends, but underlies a short-term variability decidedly more complex than an analysis on a wider time scale can show, unless it focuses on very minute observation.

By analysing the main publications in the specific cluster, Casty, in one of the larger climatic reconstructions in an Alpine context (Casty et al., 2005) – stretching over 500 years and based upon annual data – highlighted on the one hand a distribution of cold phases in the decades around 1590, 1690, 1730 and 1890, while on the other a strong concentration of warmer phases between 1994 and 2003. The same author emphasized how the pre-1900 temperatures were on average lower, with negative records around the last decades of the 17th century, consistent with the record of the minimum temperature on the European scale in the same period. In particular the winters show the greatest distance from the average, with values of 1.6°C below the average of the period 1901–2000 (p.1859). A strong transition towards milder winters on the other hand is recorded between 1890 and 1915. The variability in summer temperatures is less than the winter one, with a positive extreme recorded around 1550, and periodic phases in the 17th century and the second half of the 18th. From 1946 to 1950 a warm phase was recorded preceding the constant warming from 1970 to today, with the summer of 2003 showing a deviation of 4.4°C from the 1901–2000 average, confirmed to be around 16.1°C. From the perspective of precipitation, the same study shows how the annual amount before 1800 was less than the average of the 1901–2000 period, then to increase strongly around the 1840s and correspondingly fall in the 1860s. The negative extreme is recorded in 1540, by far the driest year. There was a sudden transition from dry periods to wet phases around 1830, 1920, and 1945. At a seasonal level, dry winters are recorded around the second half of the 19th century and were much drier from 1990 to 1994. Wet winters on the other hand mark the decades around 1670, 1720, and 1910 and those from 1950 to 1990. The year 1915 had the wettest month of the series, with one anomalous measurement of 140 mm compared to the average (245 mm). In the case of the summers three dry phases are identified: around 1540, after 1770, and 1860. That of 1540 was the driest summer with -164 mm compared to the norm (352 mm), while 1663 was the wettest (+148 mm). The complete list of the years with significant deviation from the average is given in Table 1 (temperature) and Table 2 (precipitation).

Table I.1 Temperature 1500–2004 (Casty et al., 2005)

Temperature Annual (A), Winter (W) and Summer (S) Extremes recorded in the Alps					
<b>EA+</b>	<b>EA-</b>	<b>EI+</b>	<b>EI-</b>	<b>EE+</b>	<b>EE-</b>
1540	1514	1530	1514	1536	1529
1822	1565	1607	1517	1540	1579
1994	1569	1609	1534	1556	1596
2000	1573		1561	1669	1621
2002	1587		1565	1684	1675
2003	1593		1569	1706	1813
	1594		1573	1718	1816
	1595		1587	1807	1913
	1600		1595	1811	
	1601		1600	1859	
	1608		1608	1947	
	1614		1624	1950	
	1621		1635	1952	
	1627		1649	1994	
	1641		1658	2003	
	1649		1660		
	1658		1665		
	1665		1681		
	1675		1684		



	1688		1695		
	1691		1697		
	1692		1709		
	1695		1716		
	1697		1740		
	1698		1755		
	1709		1766		
	1716		1784		
	1725		1789		
	1740		1795		
	1805		1830		
	1816		1841		
	1829		1880		
	1838		1891		
	1860		1895		
	1864		1929		
	1871		1942		
	1879		1947		
	1887		1963		
	1940				

Table I.2 Precipitation 1500–2004 (Casty et al. 2005)

Rainfall Annual (A), Winter (W) and Summer (S) Extremes recorded in the Alps					
<b>EA+</b>	<b>EA-</b>	<b>EI+</b>	<b>EI-</b>	<b>EE+</b>	<b>EE-</b>
1570	1540	1827	1858	1508	1536
1579	1567	1915	1874	1515	1540
1627	1603	1936	1882	1529	1590
1640	1669	1948	1891	1579	1616
1872	1818	1951	1992	1585	1669
1910	1834	1955		1588	1706
1960	1857	1977		1596	1782
	1861			1663	1787
	1865			1692	1911
	1921			1896	1962
	2003			1966	2003

It is thus clear how from the 1990s episodes of thermal anomaly are more widespread, with four year of anomalous heat recorded, in a total of six throughout the period under consideration, compared to the 1901–2000 average. Episodes of precipitation anomaly – much sparser than thermal anomalies in the period considered – do not indicate an important change in the most recent period.

Focusing on shorter periods, Beniston (2006) concentrates on the main climatic trends recorded in the 20th century. His article is one of the most cited in the dataset and provides a good guide line for the study of contemporary state of the art Alpine climatology, for the geographical widening of the analyses, and cover of different climatic parameters. Beniston highlights how the increase in the minimum temperatures recorded in the Swiss Alps during the period of reference is almost double the global trend, with an increase of around 2°C compared to the average and a slightly more restricted increase of maximum temperatures, whereas the analysis of precipitation shows trends of little

importance. By examining the ten-year variations in temperature, the 1940s were among the warmest, followed by a cold phase in the 1950s. The 1990s show the strongest trend of temperature increase in the whole series, probably because of the persistent positive values recorded by the NAP indices<sup>17</sup>. Figure I.8 shows the author's thermometric reconstruction for three Swiss climatological stations, contrasted to the deviation from the average on a global scale.

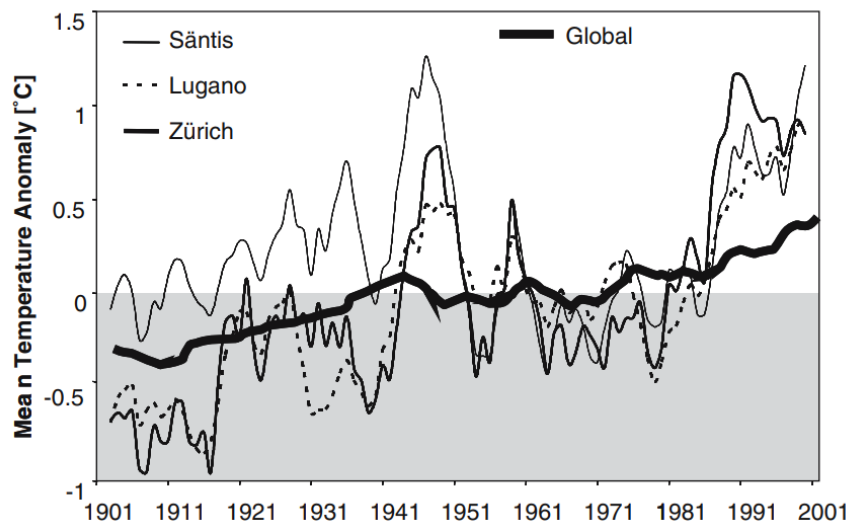


Figure I.8 Thermal anomalies of three Alpine stations compared to the average 1961-1990, contrasted to global thermal anomalies. Source: Beniston, 2006.

In line with Beniston, Acquotta, Fratianni and Garzena (2014) considered the development of temperatures between 1961 and 2010 in sixteen climatological stations at different altitudes in the north-western sector of the Italian Alps. The results show a trend of agreement in almost all the stations towards warming, with evidence of an increase in intensity with the growth in height. Above 1600 metres a.s.l. there is a marked increase in temperature and a drop in cold periods. Once again, the authors identify a clearer trend among minimum temperatures, confirming Beniston's data and – on a global scale – also that provided by the IPCC (2013). Above 1600 m, the greatest increase is recorded in spring, while maximum temperatures show similar behaviour in the different altitudinal ranges studied by the authors.

For snowfall, reconstruction of variables over the centuries, whether of episodes of snowfall or depth of snowdrifts on the ground are rare, and hence large scale studies on the entire area are not found in

<sup>17</sup> According to Beniston, positive values in the indices are associated to higher temperatures and lower rainfall compared to the Alpine region average. More precisely, the author estimates an average increase of around 1°C during periods marked by high values of Atlantic oscillation in the indices.

the dataset. Studies exist, however, that concentrate on more limited sub-areas and shorter time periods, covering approximately the period from the 1960s to today. Beniston highlights how a quantification of snow phenomena – and of those of the disappearance of accumulated snow – are essential for evaluating the effects of climate changes on the availability of water in the Alps in terms of run-off, also in his study using the metaphor of 'tower of water'. In one study of historical reconstruction, Lattersner and Schneebeli (2003) work on tracing the development of parameters of snow in the Swiss Alps (the mean depth of snow, duration of continuous snow coverage, number of days of snowfall) in the period 1931-1999, and highlight gradual trends with increasing figures until the 1980s, followed by a statistically significant decrease towards the end of the century (Lattersner, Schneebeli, 2003, p.745). Considerable spatial differences are, however, noticeable in the data: the slopes of the southern Alps differ from those of the north in having a shorter average duration of the snow cover, caused by earlier melting in spring rather than later autumn snowfall. Similarly the authors point out differences in altitude, with a more marked trend in the lower areas of the mountain relief compared to stations at a higher altitude. Moving deeper into specifics, the series of data moves from beginning in a period of winters with low snowfall to then showing a return to average values immediately after the 1930s. The 1960s and 1980s stand out for their high snowfall even compared to the average of the more snowy periods, whereas the 1990s touch negative spikes for the whole series. As regards the extreme snowfall events, the authors do not identify any significant trend. In general the long-term trends have strong variations between years, which makes their reading more difficult, although this does not prevent the recording of a number of anomalies without precedence, such as the already cited winters of the 1990s and the negative record of snow accumulation in the decade 1988-1997. In agreement with the evidence provided by Lattersner and Schneebeli, Durand (2009) undertook a retrospective study on snowfall parameters in the French Alps, using for the objectives of the study three numerical models normally used for the daily avalanche forecast, joining the results with past meteorological observations. These results also showed decreasing trends in snow cover depth, its duration on the ground<sup>18</sup>, and days of snowfall. In both the studies cited, the importance of the spatial dimension of the change was not neglected, which, combined with the great temporal variability, makes the study of Alpine snow a complex undertaking. Durand in particular highlights how the French region is characterized by a falling gradient crossing it from the north west to the south east, leading to clear altitudinal variations in the behaviour of the variables; the variations linked to the altitude, moreover, are not disconnected to factors of latitude and do not exhibit the same characteristics if measured at different levels of latitude.

---

<sup>18</sup> The decrease in accumulated snow on the ground in the period under study could, according to the authors, be explained by a strong variation at the end of the 1980s, which triggered a *step effect* in the series of data, rather than an actual negative trend in the longer term.

Briefly, and simply to gather the specific data into a homogenous argument, from the analysis of the main documents in the literature a picture is formed of a climate characterized by long-term fluctuations as far as temperature is concerned, with stages of contrasting evidence consisting of annual or inter-annual variability that is not necessarily in agreement with the dominant trend over a number of decades. By focusing on the second half of the 20th century – a period in which the phenomenon of global warming originated and developed – a trend towards increased temperatures becomes even more evident, and in the case of minimum temperatures shows a growth trend of double the global average, although tracing the maximum rainfall trends remains difficult. The parameters for snowfall on the other hand point to a decrease, even if long-term trends are difficult to extract clearly from the spatial and temporal variability of shorter periods.

Climate science in the Alps has given much thought to reconstructions of the past, but the retrospective view does not represent the only method of climate study; at a regional scale as well specific climatological sciences literature provides future projections based on statistical models. Gobiet, in an influential study of 2013<sup>14</sup>, reviewed the climatic projections available today at an Alpine level for the 21st century, gathering the results of different research studies. The Alpine climate will be strongly influenced by the phenomenon of global warming, with important consequences for its thermal and rainfall systems and on the frequency of extreme events. Under the IPCC A1B scenario<sup>19</sup>, temperatures are destined to grow at a rate of 0.25°C per decade until the mid-century, then to accelerate to a rate of 0.36°C per decade, actually slowing down the rate recorded in the last decades (0.5°C), probably due to the intervention of factors of natural variability. The datum should be interpreted with a cautious margin of uncertainty, not so much on the dominant evidence of climatic variation – the process of warming is not in doubt – as on the effective intensity of the phenomenon, which is subject to inherent imprecisions in the forecasting models or the techniques of statistical downscaling, uncertainties about the future emissions of GHG, and natural variables (Gobiet et al., 2014, p. 1149). From the spatial viewpoint, the clearer increases are recorded at greater altitudes, above all through the reduction of the albedo effect with the melting of the snow and ice, but noticeable thermal increases are also foreseen at lower altitudes, above all in summer. The extreme summer temperatures will be subject to increases in frequency and intensity compared to the norm of 1961-1990, without, however, exceeding the absolute extreme of the summer of 2003. Precipitation will undergo substantial change in the annual cycle, with a fall in average volumes in summer and a rise in winter. From the perspective of extreme phenomena as well, flooding and drought will see substantially

---

<sup>19</sup> The IPCC A1B scenario is normally defined as 'moderate' in its forecasts for temperature increase. It is based upon a hypothetical situation in which energy supply is guaranteed by equal share from among the possible sources, without excessive dependence on any one of them, whether fossil or not.

shorter periods between their occurrences. Extreme rainfall events will be particularly severe in autumn and in northern Alpine regions, where increases of up to 30% could be recorded by the end of the 21st century. In the same way, the frequency of droughts is destined to grow as a consequence of the alteration of seasonal distribution of rainfall, the increase in temperature, and correlated rate of evapotranspiration. Finally, for snow the projections generally foresee a raising of the snow line of 150 m for every °C of temperature rise. Gobiet, basing himself on the RCM forecasts, which see a rise in average temperatures of between 2 and 4°C by the end of the 21st century, foresees a snowline rise of between 300 and 600 m<sup>20</sup>. Finally, the future frequency of particularly snowy winters has been calculated by Beniston in a study of 2011, in which the author pointed out a strong reduction of their probability by the end of the 21st century, passing from one in eight winters to one in thirty (Beniston, 2011).

#### 4. CLIMATE AND THE ALPINE BIOMES

A region's climate has a profound influence on its biological characteristics: the temperature, in particular, is responsible to a large extent for the distribution of organisms in the region; not only its average values but also its oscillations play a fundamental role in defining the distribution areas of both plant and animal species (Zunino M., Zullini A., 2008, p. 60). It is not surprising, therefore, that the appearance of global warming has drawn the attention of the scientific community to its effects on biological communities, leading to the multiplication of research studies and articles produced. In analysing the literary corpus, it is striking how the number of publications in the field of botany – or at least linked to the ecology, distribution and migration of plant species – represents the great majority of these studies and publications<sup>21</sup>, whereas the scientific proportion of studies on the animal species has not increased in proportion to the cluster's general trend.

The Alps are a context of uncertainty in possible scenarios of change, through its mesoclimatic richness, already analysed here; moreover, they have been subject to pressure from anthropic activity for centuries, which has profoundly influenced species distribution. In one comprehensive panorama of Alpine flora's answers to global warming, Theurillat and Guisan (2001) identified a number of possible responses to change by plants faced with a climate in a phase of change: persistence, migration towards areas with more favourable climates, extinction. The persistence of plants in adverse climatic conditions

---

<sup>20</sup> Even if this figure may be considered as an approximation erring on the high side, because it does not include phenomena of cooling and temperature inversion linked to precipitation, these will not compensate in any way for the rise in temperatures, which remain the most important factor of control on the fall, persistence and melting of the snow.

<sup>21</sup> Among the 853 publications identified, only 25 are characterized under the labels of 'zoology', 'entomology', 'ornithology', and 'veterinary science', which represent the only ones explicitly directed towards the study of Alpine fauna.

is only possible through gradual genetic adaptation, increased phenotype plasticity, or a phenomenon of ecological buffering, in which the final results of the plant's survival is controlled by edaphic and not climatic factors<sup>22</sup>. From this assumption, the authors develop a review of the consequences of climate change on the level of species, population, vegetation, phenology, and the landscape.

On the level of plant species, paleo-ecological evidence shows how the preferred response to climatic fluctuations is migration, not without certain exceptions, such as Tertiary orophytes that survived *in situ*. The same paleoclimatic and paleoecological evidence suggests that during the warmer interglacial periods the forests climbed to higher altitudes, reducing the orophyte population at these heights. Today a significant proportion of the orophytes established in *refugia* – areas of an isolated population or the remains of a previously more extensively populated area – such as mountain peaks of limited altitude, are subject to a strong risk of extinction, due to the impossibility of migrating to greater heights. Theurillat and Guisan point out how the greater part of nival and alpine species can tolerate an increase of 1-2°C, but would have difficulty in supporting greater increases. In general, evaluating the response of a species to climate change depends on a series of factors which include the altitudinal range, the ecology, the size of the population, the genotypic and phenotypic diversity, and the area of distribution. In general the species with greater potential for adaptation, given all the characteristics listed above, are less subject to the risks of climate change (Theurillat, Guisan, 2001, p.81). Climate change does not therefore represent a risk for all the Alpine plant species and can even mean an opportunity for some of them. In the same way, the Alpine animal species have different reactions to the change in climatic parameters, although the volume of literature dedicated to them is more sparse. In one study of 2012, Ravermann identified how the increase in temperature could lead to a reduction of up to two-thirds in the habitat of the Alpine rock ptarmigan (*Lagopus muta helvetica*) by 2070, pointing out, however, that climate is a dominant factor in future predictions only at a macroscale and mesoscale, while on higher scales the availability of habitat and the local topography retain greater explanatory powers of the output produced by the forecast model used (Ravermann R. et al., 2012, p. 898). In agreement with Ravermann's results, a recent study has modelled the future dynamic of the distribution area of two species of owl – the Eurasian pygmy owl and the boreal owl – highlighting how distribution in the Alpine region is experiencing a contraction, above all in the case of the boreal owl (Brambilla M. et al, 2015). In contrast, studies on the pine processionary moth (*Thaumetopoea pityocampa*) show that the increase in winter temperatures is lowering the larvae's mortality rate, so increasing the parasite's population (Dobbertin et al., 2007, pp. 237-238).

---

<sup>22</sup> Obviously, for these conditions to succeed other determining influences must be added, such as fragmentation of the habitat or plant-animal interaction.

Concentrating on studies of the individual populations, Theurillat and Guisan arrange the influences of climate change on plants into separate categories: genetic diversity, persistence, dispersal, fragmentation, and plant-animal interaction. Looking at genetic diversity, present climate change creates situations of population isolation at high altitudes, indirectly encouraging impoverishment of the genetic patrimony of the isolated population where it is cut off from dispersal by physical barriers and so from potential hybridization. Where, by contrast, hybridization is in some way made possible by the absence of geographical barriers, climate change can encourage mechanisms of speciation, removing the new hybrids from competition by means of genetic and geographical isolation compared to the parent population, avoiding competition and *back-crossing*. Phenomena of persistence exist above all in the presence of cryogenic processes, permafrost, and upward slopes (Theurillat, Guisan, 2001, p.82), while with dispersal, climate change should allow new areas of colonization to be reached in the nival and Alpine zones by populations whose dispersal is ruled by the wind. Studies on dispersal at lower heights remain much more difficult because of human use of the soil, the forests, and changes in the practices and extent of agricultural surfaces.

The prevalent role of the Alpine snow zone in the study of climate change is also confirmed in the case of the phenomenon of fragmentation of the population, which plays a particularly important role for orophytes and endemic species. Endemisms in the Alpine snow zone are subject to high risk of fragmentation due to the reduction of the areas on which they can become established. Although the populations more widely distributed in the Alps do not face any immediate risk of extinction, a number of isolated Arctic populations could disappear and this could also be true for the endemic populations established on the peaks of the lower mountains in the Alpine region. To this can finally be added the interaction between plants and animals, which influences the phenomena of dispersal, primarily through the activity of herbivores, parasites, and pollinators. The herbivores exercise a selective control of the populations through grazing and their own food preferences. The increase of atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> can lead to a 'dilution of nitrogen' effect in the plant tissue, causing the herbivores to graze more intensely in order to maintain constant levels of nitrogen, so applying selective pressures on some populations and thus altering the composition of the species. There is no lack of examples of selective pressure by red deer (*cervus elaphus*) and roe deer (*Capreolus capreolus*) to the damage of populations of European silver fir (*abies alba*) and the advantage of competitive populations, such as the Norwegian spruce (*Picea abies*) (Motta, Nola, 1996, pp. 81-85).

In the case of parasites, rising temperatures, joined to more marked conditions of aridity, could cause a rise in sugar levels accumulated in the needles of the dominant tree species, increasing the availability and quality of nutrients. The same climatic conditions could cause a fall in the parasites' mortality levels,



at the same time accelerating their growth. Cases in line with this theoretical development have been recorded in the Italian Prealps with invasions of *pamphiliidae*, to the damage of the Norwegian spruce (*Picea abies*) populations (Marchisio C. et al., 1994), or the attacks by the common pine shoot beetle (*Tomicus piniperda*) on populations of the Scots pine (*pinus sylvestris*) in the Vallese (Rebetez, Dobbertin M, 2004). Finally, the relationship with pollinators can also be subject to influences from an atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> increase, particularly in the timing and intensity of flowering and the quality of the nectar. The insects, however, appear to be more responsive than plants to climate changes, such that an altitudinal displacement of the species is not a great risk.

By concentrating on plants and their response, the research focuses on potential decline of the vegetation zones. One of the most recurrent themes is the raising of the average height of the limits of close forest (*timberline*) and the limits of tree species (*tree line*) on the Alpine slopes, both controlled by thermal rules in natural conditions. The anthropic capillary influence on Alpine vegetation, however, makes studying and modelling the tree line particularly complex due to the impact of abandonment of grazing activities in the summer pastures, triggering processes of secondary succession. Both these phenomena therefore act as the forces of a transition from herbal plant cover to arboreal cover. In one Swiss research study aimed at defining which of the two phenomena is most responsible for the rise of the treeline, Gehrig-Fasel, Guisan and Zimmermann show how the processes of recolonization following the abandonment of the pastures are predominant and how – theoretically – a rise in temperatures like the recent one will raise the tree line by at least 200 m, a figure decidedly greater than the reality of the evidence gathered (Gehrig-Fasel J., Guisan A., Zimmermann N.E., 2007; p 581). Yet the influence of climate change cannot be ignored, because elements of disturbance such as microclimates and frequent stochastic processes such as avalanches, snowfall, or discontinuity in the permafrost can force the limits of the wood above its own natural height limit. As a result, it becomes difficult to separate the effect of the climate, which would appear at higher altitudes, from reforestation of the grazing lands, which at this height becomes predominant.

The rise in the average height is not only, however, about the tree line, which is only part of a much vaster process, embracing all the high vegetation zones. Theurillat and Guison point out how for a warming of 3.3°C there is a corresponding rise of 600 m, reducing the width of the zone of Alpine vegetation by 63%, while the lower zones would record minor shrinking. The extent of the zones' areas is not, however, the only important factor; the incline plays a determining role. The altimetric distribution of slopes with inclines of above 40% limits the capacity of the vegetational zones to migrate, due to their inability to sustain a compact mass of vegetation. Expected changes in the composition of the vegetation differ in cases of edaphic or climatic communities – with the latter more

affected by changes in the meteorological variables – but the physiognomy of the terrain will determine, together with the migration of non-native species, the continuation of the plant associations or the displacement of the phyto-sociological classifications that we know today in the Alpine context. Keller, Kienast and Beniston, in an account of empirical evidence recorded at the Schynige Platte observation site in the Swiss Alps, show how thermophyle species have grown in numbers at the expense of microtherm species from 1930 to the present. The authors further highlight the temporal constancy of factors such as the availability of nutrients, so attributing the fundamental cause of the process to climatic variability (Keller, Kienast, Beniston, 2000, p.76). On their part Theurillat and Guisan point out how the forecast models – both statistical and dynamic – are in agreement in forecasting an expansion of deciduous forest in the Alpine region, forcing the coniferous forest to migrate to higher levels, with particular zones that show a more marked susceptibility, as in the case of a number of subalpine forests of Swiss stone pine (*Pinus cembra*) and European larch (*larix decidua*). In the same way, increased temperatures in the south of the Alps is leading to a phenomenon of invasion of species that are typically absent in the mountain and hill vegetation zones, a process defined in Italian as '*laurofillizzazione*' (Rebetez, 2009), in which species belonging to the evergreen laurel family replace characteristic species of the vegetation zones of the hills.

If documentary evidence of a potential or actual change in the composition and structure of vegetation in the Alps occurs frequently in the scientific literature, the phenological aspect has not been neglected; phenology is actually a useful tool for evaluating the impact of climate change on plants' growth and productivity (Theurillat, Guisan, 2001; p.93), but also for understanding the consequences for animals' life cycles (European Environmental Agency, 2017). The detection of phenological data in the Alps is a scientific practice that has deep roots in Alpine research history<sup>23</sup>. On the whole the scientific community is agreed in observing a lengthening of the vegetative growing season, which begins early compared to the historical average in the spring and tends to come to an end later in winter (Rebetez, 2009), so attributing an overriding weight to the thermal factor. In a research studied carried out on the moraines of the Schwarzenberger-Seespitze glacier, in the Austrian Alps, Huelber confirms the dependence of phenological development on the temperature, but also highlights the influence of the role of the photoperiod, even if difficult to estimate (Huelber, 2006, pp. 101-102). The studies on the nival zone certainly do not exhaust the geographical variability on the research sites on phenological mechanisms, which are widely studied on a European scale. In a panorama focused on the collection of data from further European areas, Chmielewski and Rötzer (2002) identify a more marked trend

---

<sup>23</sup> Carl Schröter was already estimating in 1926 how a growth in height of 100 m would be accompanied by a temperature drop of 0.55°C and a shortening of the vegetative growing season by nine days, basing his calculations on his studies of the Swiss National Park.

towards warming for the central European area, while on the continental level there are seven days of lengthening of the vegetative growth season for every grade of warming.

## 5. THE EFFECTS OF THE CLIMATE ON THE ABIOTIC SUBSTRATUM

The overwhelming majority of more iconic images of climate change on the global scale are of the shrinking of the ice sheets and its consequences. Documentation linked to the melting of continental and polar frozen surfaces are part and parcel of scientific communication, as clear and appreciable evidence of changes in action in the climatic regime. The definition, widespread in scientific communication, of 'global warming' expresses perfectly the reaction of the glaciers to temperature variations and provides a successful metaphor for communication to the public at large. Yet the term has its roots in the historical use of the frozen environments in the scientific community as a source of *proxy data* for the reconstruction of the climate of the past, both more recent and remote. In this context, the Alps once more exhibit a high density of information, both on the recent glacial dynamic, for which recording tools exist, and for the study of glacial morphology, which allows the reconstruction of variations in the glacial fronts on a geological scale. As a result, scientific production on the glaciological environment occupies a significant percentage in the total of clusters linked to changes of the abiotic environment and can be briefly subdivided between *site-specific studies* and *regional studies* (Beniston et al., 2018; p. 765). The phenomenon of the melting of the ice can be traced back through the 19th and 20th centuries, although there were brief oscillatory periods, among them the cold period of 1950-1980, one indication of running counter to the long-term trend. This cold period was followed by consistent acceleration in the shrinking of the glacial masses, estimated at around 20% in the case of the Swiss glaciers in the period 1980-2000 (Rebetz M., 2009, p.52). On the level of the phenomenon's spatial variability as well – present to a certain extent – comparative studies of different glacial areas show very similar behaviour: this is the case of the glaciers of Claridenfirn (Switzerland) and the Sarennes (France), monitored by Vincent (2004) on a scale of many decades, which exhibit similar mass balances, linked in both cases to summer melting, which is the primary cause of the annual contraction. Successive observation – carried out on a single site at the Sforzellina glacier in Valtellina – notes, from 2002, a net increase in the rate of melting compared to the average value (Cannone et al., 2008, p.637), and more generally even exceeding the more pessimistic scenarios generated by the forecasting models in the 1990s (Rebetz, 2009, p.53). In terms of measurements of area and volume, recent estimates on a national scale indicate that the Austrian Alps lost 17% of frozen surfaces in the years 1969-1998 (Lambrecht, Kuhn, 2007; p.177), while for the Swiss Alps an estimate of the volume of ice lost from 1999 stands around 12% of the initial  $74 \pm 9 \text{ km}^3$  (Farinotti et al., 2009, pp. 225-231). In

general, the scientific community is in agreement in forecasting an almost complete disappearance of the minor glaciers by the end of the century, while scenarios based on a constant increase of 0.4°C per decade show a similar outcome for the majority of valley glaciers. Several studies on a regional scale forecast a disappearance of 76-97% of glacial volume by the end of the 21st century, showing once again how the Alpine glaciers – and more generally European ones – are off-balance compared to today's climate (Beniston et al, 2018, p. 766).

Unlike the mass of information describing the behaviour of the glaciers, the case of the permafrost is undoubtedly more problematic, since its behaviour following the rise in temperatures is less known, although its extensive area is comparable to that involved in the surface glacial phenomena. The larger part of the studies actually need to be based on indirect methodologies for the collecting of information, given the unfathomable nature of the permafrost for a visual analysis, as can be carried out for the glaciers. Geophysical surveys of surfaces intended to determine the physical properties of the terrain are joined to kinematic and geodetic measuring, aimed however at the identification of phenomena of subsidence, *creep* and slope instability, besides the obvious thermometric measures in boreholes<sup>24</sup>. What emerges is a clear indication that permanence and depth of the snowy cover, along with – as a consequence – the temperature of the ground, play the role of controlling factors for the formation and conservation of interstitial ice. The timing of the snowfall is another fundamental factor: heavy early snowfalls run the risk of isolating the ground and preventing the heat from leaving it; conversely, late snowfalls keep the temperature of the ground low, provided they persist throughout the winter season, which ideally should be drier. The snow cover, moreover, provides higher albedo levels, reflecting quantities that are decidedly more consistent with solar radiation than rock, which, although on the one hand allows the freeing of thermal energy arising from the ground depth during the period of snowfall<sup>25</sup>, on the other transfers the thermal energy to the soil, above all during periods of thaw (Rebetez, 2009, p.68). Studies based on forecast models show how in conditions of wetter winters followed by warmer and drier summers the permafrost can be hundreds of metres higher, leaving the lower levels subject to phenomena of rockslide following the melting of the ice, endangering the stability of the slopes (Beniston, Haberli, 1998; p. 258). The meltwater actually infiltrates the ground thanks to higher temperatures, reducing the ground's cohesion and creating slope distortions (Beniston et al., 2018, p. 766). To put the information given here into perspective, it is necessary to specify how the behaviour of the permafrost is differentiated on the basis of a combination of elements including the concentration of the ice, the gradient and orientation of the slopes, the composition of the soil, and, as given above, the albedo or solar reflection. In response to the lack of historical data and

---

<sup>24</sup> The longest series of observations on the permafrost has been in the Alps, in the Swiss rock glacier of Murtèl-Corvatsch.

<sup>25</sup> The principle stated here is only valid in the case of rocky outcrops emerging from the snow cover.

observations, there are today an increasing number of different projects linked to the study and modeling of the permafrost, above all the Swiss project PERMOS (*Permafrost Monitoring in Switzerland*), which operates on a national scale throughout the Swiss federation.

The melting of the ice, which in the Alps is only restricted in the high altitudes, contributes to determining further impacts on the abiotic mountain environment, being closely connected to the variability of the supply of water, although not being its primary control factor. The Alpine run-off is a direct result of precipitation – its timing and form – and the melting of snow – primarily – and ice during spring and summer and as a result is strongly regulated by the climatic regime. On the theoretical level the reduction in winter snow cover, coupled with the higher frequency of rainfall, leads to an increase in the volume of run-off in the winter and early spring, then to drop sharply between late spring and late autumn (Beniston et al., 2011, p.734). In addition, the average rise in temperatures determines positive feedback, increasing the phenomena of spring melting and contributing to a greater run-off at that time. In one comparative study centred on different observation sites, comprising modeling of their future given behaviour from climatic simulations, Farinotti foresaw the advent of a phase of growth of annual flow, followed by one of contraction, above all for the fluvial basins fed by glacial meltwater; in these sites in particular there will be a transition from the glacial or glacial-nival regime to one preponderantly nival, that is, a concentration of the greatest flow no longer in summer but during the spring months. According to the same study the maximum of total volumes of flow will occur by 2050, while the maximum flow over the year will be earlier, at a rate of  $4.4 \pm 1.7$  days per decade, in a projection to 2100 (Farinotti et al., 2012, p.1909). Although the same authors suggest it is difficult to generalize from data on regional scales, the link between rainfall and flow remains of primary interest, and will tend to be reinforced elsewhere in the Alpine region. In the basins linked to lower levels of glaciation (less than 40%) the estimates highlight a positive correlation between the run-off and precipitation, while it remains insignificant in the basins linked to greater levels of glaciation (between 40% and 70%) (ibidem, p.1921). The scientific community – excluding local indigenous differences – is therefore in agreement in depicting a future in which not only the volume of available water will vary in a non-linear manner, but the seasonal timing will also differ from the historical data gathered so far, actually projecting the water provision of the region in a situation of uncertainty.

Another argument of primary interest for the future of the Alps is linked to the frequency and severity of flooding, directly, although not exclusively, connected to the increase of the phenomena of extreme precipitation. The high temperatures and resultant rise in the snow's altitudinal limits actually lead to a drop in the water stored in solid form and therefore not contributing to the run-off; the result is direct participation in the precipitation run-off at high altitudes and hence a noticeable increase in the

volumes of water affected (Rebetez, 2009, p. 73). Relatively more complex phenomena too, such as the increase in episodes of rain on snow (ROS) can have significant impacts on the frequency of Alpine flooding, as shown by studies conducted in the Sitter basin in the north-east of Switzerland. Being positively correlated with temperature behaviour, the frequency of similar episodes in the future has been modelled, resulting in an increased risk of around 50% in the case of a temperature increase between 2° and 4°C, when the snow reserves will have basically disappeared (Beniston, Stoffel, 2016, p. 228).

Finally in the case of phenomena of drought, we can expect a growth in frequency because of the greater temperatures, more intense evapotranspiration, and the drop in the frequency of rainfall precipitation, adversely affecting in particular the southern slopes of the Alps (Beniston et al., 2018, p. 772).

## II. Epistemic geographies of climatic changes in protected areas

### 1. TRAPPED IN SPACE: PROTECTED AREAS IN A CLIMATE THAT IS CHANGING

*“Stationarity is dead”*

(Milly et al., 2008)

*“A protected area is a clearly defined geographical space, recognised, dedicated and managed, through legal or other effective means, to achieve the long term conservation of nature with associated ecosystem services and cultural values”*

(Dudley, 2013)

The formulation of a comprehensive definition of the meaning of 'protected area' is a less simple task than might appear. Over the arc of their history the protected areas have accepted diverse tasks, cared for specific different objects, and changed their spatial area to pursue their own ends. Dudley's definition today provides us with a versatile tool that includes all the possible taxonomies developed by the International Union for Conservation of Nature (IUCN) over the years: from reserves of the biosphere to National Parks, from networks of natural reserves to areas that safeguard the landscape and sustainable use of resources. The history of conservation is full of examples of protected areas responsible for achieving very heterogeneous objectives. The most emblematic case is probably the dialectic of the 1920s and 1930s between the model of American conservation, realized in the Yellowstone National Park, and the Swiss model, embodied in the Swiss National Park. Although undeniable points of common interest were represented by the centrality of the wilderness, the guardianship of a form of *ur-Nature* (Kupper, 2014) which would act as a counterweight to the advance of modernity, and the "nationalization" of nature as a unifying symbol, the differences between the two cases remain profound. The common wording of 'National Park' conceals two radically different missions and two wide-apart ways of understanding conservation, which have finally polarized into true systems of reference. The American model, shaped by the romantic European ideal, focused on conservation for recreational ends of the human community. The institution of Yellowstone appeared before awareness of the environmental crisis, the action preceded the idea – as Roderick Nash (1967)

notes – and as a result the park did not include ecological themes but only a naturalistic interest which equated the fascination of 'virgin' nature to that of the splendour of European castles and cathedrals. The Swiss model, by contrast, placed the scientific dimension at the heart of the National Park, creating an area of Totalschutz (Kupper 2009, p.62), of total preservation, in which to carry out the Grand Experiment of which Schröter was the visionary, completely excluding the human component.

If the purposes and missions have remained variables in the world of conservation and, in particular, in the protected areas, the boundary has, up until now, taken on the role of the constant. The boundaries of the protected area are what has made it such a successful, and at the same time contested, conservation tool. While on the one hand the exclusion of human activity from the exploitation of the natural resources has guaranteed the creation of a widespread archipelago on a global scale of protected areas of extremely varied dimensions, on the other it has generated a plethora of conflicts linked to access to the land and its resources, including the most fundamental: space. From the point of view of geographical science, the boundary has been widely studied in its relations to local communities. Dan Brockington, in a publication which has in its way become iconic, speaks of the concept of the protected area as a "Green Fortress", which excludes all human activities, in particular those concerning the local communities (Brockington, 2002). Brockington's aim is to highlight the extent of injustice in nature conservation, which in many geographical contexts has led to deprivation, above all for indigenous communities, excluded from access to natural resources. Along the same lines as Brockington, Zimmerer suggests exploiting the new conceptual instruments of nonequilibrium ecology in order to rethink the very paradigm of conservation by means of practices that are no longer exclusive and segregationary (Zimmerer, 2000). The perspective adopted by this train of thought concentrates above all on case-studies coming from developing countries, in which the rigidity of the boundary actually delineates an alien element that, often through supranational dictates, breaks the historical continuity of the man-environment relationships developed in the individual terrain. The geographers' interest seldom turns to analysis of the aims of the individual protected areas or a critique of the formulas of conservation adopted. Yet, as Kupper (2014) notes, the idea of insulation, of discontinuity of the territorial fabric as an instrument for the creation of spaces "other" than our own, has for years governed the rationale of conservation, stimulating at the same time a conceptual division between nature and culture, and presenting this with a material manifestation at a geographical level, a realized heteropia. As an exception in this panorama, a productive thematic nucleus has recently been developed among British geographers, focused on the search for alternative conservation formulas for protected areas and aimed at the creation of open-ended results rather than the benchmark static ecological communities (Lorimer 2012), or on the search for interpretations of the geographical peculiarities of ecological connectivity and its consequences (Hodgetts, 2014). Although the necessity



for alternative formulas in conservation is at the centre of a fruitful discussion, at least in the discipline of geography, the success of the protected areas in nature conservation has been shown to be high up until now, with the exception of local episodes of human intervention linked more to policy contingencies than to the limitations of the model. In this scenario of substantial acceptance of the model adopted as a tried and tested solution, the advent of climate change can be read as a problem so deep as to reach the paradigmatic level. The boundaries of the protected areas, for the first time, are an inefficient weapon of conservation because they cannot handle the effects of changes in the climate beyond the perimeters of protection. Whatever the type of area protected, its conservation aim and geographical position, climate change is an element that can deeply influence the success of the conservationist policies carried out, as a result of its capacity to influence diverse constituent elements of the protected areas. If in the modern history of conservation the constant (the boundary) has made possible the control of the variables (objects of interest, conservationist objectives), climate change shatters the paradigm in its very foundations. The existence of the boundary is no longer able to act as a necessary and sufficient condition for guaranteeing exclusive control of all the variables. The entrance of the independent variable – no longer another neutral constant – of the climate actually causes the ecological balances to alter, sometimes profoundly, and forces them to come to terms with a fundamental reality: nature cannot be frozen in a predetermined ecosystemic state. This means, in a certain sense, ceasing to consider the protected areas as a 'rethinking of our spatio-temporal conceptions capable of identifying which relicts of history and nature to maintain in the territorial dimension' (Schmidt di Friedberg, 2004, p.13), and instead beginning to reconceptualize them as a stage setting in which different elements – species, morphology, balances, and sometimes entire ecosystems – are no longer remains available to us, segregating them in the spatial dimension of 'there' and in the temporal one of 'for ever' in a little bit of land carved out of the country. The focus of every attempt at land conservation must therefore be modified in the face of climate change and incorporate in its own value system the old enemy: change.

In order to handle the complex subject of the impacts - measurable and potential – of climate change in the protected areas, the main spheres of influence can be briefly schematized as follows.

- 1) Effects on the species: the first element of basic importance for management concerns the movement of species associated with changes in the climate. The new thermo-pluviometric regimes determine changes in species' spatial distribution, substantially changing the species' composition within the protected area. This translates to the concrete possibility of discovering new species inside the protection boundary, as if the changes were helping to displace populations historically resident outside the perimeter (Parmesan, 2006). A limited capacity for dispersal or a fragmented habitat around the

historical range can constitute fundamental obstacles to migration and could lead to contraction of the bio-geographic area (Mortiz, 2008; Wilson 2011). The main point in this case is therefore the incompatibility of the protected area's spatial immobility with the species' heightened mobility, above all when the species were a cardinal element for the policies of conservation adopted.

2) Effects on the landscape: direct and indirect alterations to the physical environment of the protected area, that is, displacement of the biogeographic areas, new regimes of wildfires, melting of the glaciers, and depletion of the water basins, will lead inevitably to deep changes in the landscape of the protected areas, which could differ noticeably in the future from how they appear today (Thompson et al., 1998).

3) Effects on the ecosystems: the alterations in the protected areas' physical environment will, in many cases, lead to further important ecosystem adjustments, with estimates forecasting substantial differences to plant cover (Lemieux, Scott 2005; Saunders 2007). Changes in the rainfall and wildfire regimes could accelerate transitions from one ecosystem to another. In the case of rainfall, an alteration in the absolute volumetric value and in its temporal distribution could cause noticeable changes to the available water resources. In the protected mountain areas, as indicated in the previous chapter, an increase in rain precipitation at the expense of snowfall will necessarily lead to a different surface runoff, with directly related results for the ecological communities and the availability of water resources throughout the year. A greater frequency of wildfires, on the other hand, could redefine the plant cover of entire protected areas, facilitating the succession of fire-tolerant species. Where the wildfires also increase in intensity, they could even cause a change in the age and structure of vegetation in a number of regions, leading to the replacement of mixed forest with new, younger and more uniform forests, with potentially severe consequences for habitat connectivity and wildlife conservation.

5) Effects on human-environment interaction: the biotic and abiotic alterations which the protected areas must face will obviously also have repercussions on the human activities present within them and permitted by the conservation model adopted. In the North American parks this converts principally into potential changes in the performance of the recreational functions which the parks are expected to deliver, bearing in mind the seasonality of the influx of visitors. Equally, declines in some of the animal and plant populations, important landscape changes, and breaking of ecosystem integrity could lead to a fall in visitors' affection for the areas subject to change, due to the decreased adhesion to the aesthetic principles belonging to the historical ecological-environmental equilibrium (Scott 2007; Lemieux 2011). In the case of protected areas responding to different conservation criteria, the environmental changes could have a negative impact in ethno-ecological wisdom and the availability of resources (Turner, Clifton 2009).

In the face of the numerous risks arising from climate change, the conservation community has broached the subject many times, with the aim of producing shared principles on the policies of adjustment to adopt. In 2016, the IUCN published guidelines for all the protected areas, consisting of a series of recommendations that are globally valid and can be scaled in accordance with the regional context, the type of area, and the network of shareholders involved. The IUCN aims to stimulate progressive incorporation of climate change into the planning of all protected areas by identifying a number of best practices (IUCN 2016, p.14). The body identified different levels at which the new practices could be integrated, starting with a concept that could, to a certain extent, be called revolutionary: accept and accommodate the change. On the ecological and, in some sense, philosophical levels, the measure includes a fundamental move: accepting climate change means abandoning the claim of controlling its results, in place of being best able to channel it in the most desirable directions. On the level of management this means first abandoning every baseline of the historical example, actually removing the ideals of the ecological communities of reference: climate change is driving the ecosystems beyond their true equilibrium (or rather, beyond the state which we are accustomed to think of as equilibrium) and this forces us to come to terms with the fact that every point of historical ecosystem equilibrium is transitory. The equilibrium is therefore determined by a series of points in a temporal continuum, in which an ecological community of reference, a static point of arrival, cannot exist, just as we can no longer consider climate as a stationary element. With the death of the idea of a constant climate, even those concepts widely used in several conservationist contexts, such as historical allegiance as a founding principle of conservation policies, will count for less. The management must therefore incorporate the climate, but above all its variability, in the future direction of the protected areas, through an approach which reflects the idea of continuous change, cyclically embracing phases of resistance to change, resilience and realignment when it becomes necessary to facilitate the ecological transition and promote certain desirable features. The protected areas must thus adopt a proactive management viewpoint, able continuously to reconsider their own conservation objectives, from time to time evaluating their level of attainability according to the development of climatic-environmental conditions. The conservation objectives, therefore, must be flexible and the possibility of abandoning them whenever they become impractical should not be excluded. The objectives reflect the value system, and knowing how to adapt it is the first priority.

At this point it becomes necessary to make explicit, in the review of management strategies, what has until now been kept on an implicit level: the role of science. Even if the IUCN rarely mentions the subject directly, science's central status in the adjustment strategies is clearly appreciable. The construction of a management system involves a notable mass of scientific information, necessary to evaluate the intensity and direction of the processes in action: programmes of monitoring aimed at

gathering information in the medium to long term are obviously fundamental elements, but are not on their own sufficient for successfully informing a plan of adjustment. Having to deal with climate change means today, above all, having to come to terms with the dimension of uncertainty (ibid. p.21), which can only be faced by producing a range of hypotheses within a given field of potential variables. Climate models and projections therefore become key tools, as are studies linked to ecological reactions to rising temperatures or alteration in pluviometric regimes and natural disturbances, not to forget the need for research studies linked to the response of human communities with direct relationships to the protected area. In the same way the spatial scale must be able to move from local to regional, from a specific site to the entire system, embracing not only the conservation principles of the ecosystem in its entirety in the protected area, but also between the protected areas, ensuring sufficient levels of connectivity to allow the movement of species between the different areas. All these needs mobilize studies arising from classic disciplines – ecology, glaciology, geomorphology, geology, hydrology, climatology, and geography – but equally require a functional integration of these competences in an application of "fringe science" between the traditional fields of knowledge, from the science of connectivity to scenario planning and risk management. The variability of the spatial-temporal scales of reference also requires the integration of approaches that are diametrically opposed on the level of geographical and methodological focus. The analysis of vast volumes of data linked to the scale of the landscape, needed for analysing the systems of the protected areas in their interactions, both realized and potential, must be integrated from studies at the local level, focused for example on the response of individual human communities to changes or to the migration of species that are locally important. This means, moreover, combining approaches based on statistical analysis on a wide scale (Big Data) with in-depth studies on a qualitative level (*Thick Data*<sup>26</sup>) to be able to monitor them as a whole and as their individual components.

The centrality of the scientific undertaking is being used itself not only in its traditional forms but also when translated into forms of boundary and transformation science. What remains to be verified is the level of effective collaboration between science and management on the direction of the protected areas, starting really from an evaluation of the level of scientific production. The aim of this chapter will therefore be that of defining the geography of the scientific contributions that can be used today by park managers and the entire conservation epistemic community in the study of climate change, by tracing the main geographical patterns in its production and examining the reasons for this specific distribution, then to focus on the Alpine macroregion and its role in this global circuit.

---

<sup>26</sup> The definition adopted here of *thick data* is a broad one. We apply the definition to qualitative informative materials, tools or techniques that help scientists and manager to gather granular, specific knowledge about their target regions or communities.

## 2. CLIMATE CHANGE IN THE PROTECTED AREAS: A GEOGRAPHY OF SCIENTIFIC INTEREST

### 2.1 OUTLINES OF THE GEOGRAPHY OF SCIENCE AND PRINCIPLES OF REGIONALIZATION

*“Just as none of us is outside or beyond geography, none of us is completely free from the struggle over geography. That struggle is complex and interesting because it is not only about soldiers and cannons, but also about ideas, about forms, about images and imaginings”* (Said, 1993; p. 6)

Out of so many theories on the circulation of knowledge developed in the international context, probably Edward Said's *Travelling Theories* (1991) are the ideal point of departure for explaining, from a theoretical viewpoint, what is meant in using the label "geography of science". Said expresses an intuitive concept, an inherent ownership in ideas and theories, namely the capacity to circulate from person to person, from situation to situation, from institution to institution, and from one historical moment to another. Yet the process – and it is at this point that the discourse loses its apparent simplicity – is never that of a perfect migration from A to B, because the transfer necessarily involves a transformation. Circulation and translation are reciprocally constituent concepts, and so a pure replication of a theory does not exist. What Said wishes to elucidate is the finite nature of the theory, which must be understood in relation to the space and time in which it is formed. A theory is therefore a direct product of space and time and will always adapt to the space and time in which it is found (Livingstone, 1995; p. 7). Obviously, these considerations also apply to scientific theories.

Science is, first of all, a social undertaking (Finnegan, 2008). The exploration of the unknown and the construction of knowledge have never been exclusively technical projects, but should be read as challenges built by a community to give themselves rules and hierarchies. David Livingstone highlights how in the 17th century scientific production had specific geographies: the production of knowledge was not an a-spatial process, but was deeply rooted inside the place within which the knowledge-based undertaking could be defined as legitimate. In this case, the laboratory assumed the role of the place of legitimization, a place in which the behaviour of scientific enquiry could be expressed and from which the final product – the discovery, or the proof of the theory – could be presented to an audience of the scientist's peers, effectively bringing it face to face with a community. In the same way, Livingstone also shows how science presents principles of regionalization. There are no scientific discoveries valid in Manchester which cannot be verified in Venice by following the same

method, whenever this is rigorous and shared with the scientific community, but there were – and are – regions in which the combination of socio-political, geographical and economic factors made the development of determined scientific paradigms easier, faster, and more pervasive. Scientific communities differed from region to region, organizing themselves around different key problems, methods and interests.

Starting from these premises an entire thread of study appears in the field of historical geography, which explores the mechanisms that determine the emergence of scientific areas (Livingstone, 1995), the circulation of science across different lands and its reception and reworking in different scientific regions (Livingstone, 2003; Powell 2007), the tight relationships between scientific paradigms and landscapes or entire bioregions, as in the case of the unfortunate link between the forest-gardens of Lesosad and the "scientific" trend of Lysenkoism (Fleming, 2014). The historical occurrence of this kind of research has moreover found fertile ground in ecology, the history of which discipline is today the subject of frequent studies on the spatiality which has allowed particular conservation theories, practices and policies that have fundamentally influenced research and its scientific paradigms. The literature has therefore no lack of examples of historical and geographical analysis of the different theories and methods of ecological science: from the duality of the French and American taxonomy systems, derived from the studies of Josias Braun-Blanquet on the one hand and those of Friedric Clements on the other (Livingstone 1995), passing then to the study of the concept of scale in ecological studies and its role in the building of global knowledge (Vetter, 2017), to arrive finally at organized attempts to construct a thread of enquiry on the role of space and place in the history of ecology (De Bont, Lachmund, 2017).

The definition of "geography of science" does, however, also include a different approach to the study of spatiality, this time more markedly quantitative and directed towards an analysis of the distribution of research centres and publications with the help of software aimed at cartographic analysis of metadata (Small, Garfield, 1995; Leydersdorff, Persson, 2010; Bornmann et al. 2011, Bornmann, Waltman, 2011). This family of study was born as an offshoot of bibliometrics and scientometrics, with the aim of integrating a spatial dimension into this applied discipline, often with the objective of an evaluation of the research. Among the more recent research pointers, the integration of network analysis definitely marks an important progress for this type of study, because it provides the possibility of adding to the cartography generated with data in order to describe not only the objects but also their inter-relationships. If on the one hand the studies linked to spatial scientometrics allow the materialization visually and quantitatively of several of the theoretical elements belonging to the geography of science – laboratories, regional clusters, information circulation circuits – on the other the

scope of the geographical analysis is no more profound, in this developmental stage, than a – necessary but insufficient – localized geography. The identification of patterns is rarely followed by a geographical, sociological or geo-historical analysis capable of lending meaning to the spatial arrangement derived from the treatment of the metadata. To use a fundamental quotation, “geography of science implies more than an acknowledgement of the locational context of science” (Driver 1994, p. 338).

The English geographer Richard Powell, in tackling the wide discourse linked to the literature in the field of historical geography of science, draws attention to the possibility of going beyond the strictly historical dimension by embracing contemporaneity and the necessity for contemporary research, identifying a field of promising – and urgently necessary – application in the study of the geography of the geographical sciences (Powell 2007, pp. 321-322). Geographers' attention has often lingered inside their own discipline, seeking to gather from it a supposed special epistemological status or attempting to bridge the gap between the two spirits of geography. The possible application of a view of geography of science as a tool to mend the internal fractures of geographical disciplines is certainly a stimulating scientific undertaking for those who work within those disciplines, but the potentialities of the method could be extended beyond the individual academic boundary to embrace complex problems involving interdisciplinary interests. On this theme, among the great challenges that contemporary geography can and must face, climate change is perhaps the most important and complex. Mahoney and Hulme describe the phenomenon as a prism out of which breaks an infinite variety of values, discourses and images (Mahoney, Hulme, 2018; p. 397). Starting with this concept, the British geographers outline the "geographies of climatic sciences", which they define as "epistemic geographies", using the Foucaultian interpretation of the term and the concept of the epistemic community coined by Peter Haas (1992). Concentrating on the epistemological geographies of climate change means, to use the authors' words, "[to give attention] to the uneven geographies of scientific authority, the spatialities of the boundaries drawn between the scientific and the political, and the situated co-production of epistemic and normative commitments" (Mahoney, Hulme 2018; p. 396). The two authors therefore examine how the distribution of sites influences the building, inside the epistemic community, of scientific knowledge, how they form the regions of production of information, and how this information can travel from one region to another, meeting different openings for the reception and revision of its content.

Beginning with Livingstone's studies on the different receptions of Darwinism in diverse social contexts (Livingstone, 1995), the topic of reception and revision has taken on a central role among the possible paths of enquiry for the geography of science, summarized in what Livingstone defines as "scientific styles" (ibid., p.16). Different institutional arrangements and socio-economic and political

conditions are variables which actively influence the process of regionalization of science and its related distinct "styles". Among the different possible applications of the conceptual and methodological tools of the geography of science, one of the most interesting for the study of climate change is therefore the definition of the diverse scientific cultures developed in the various epistemic communities involved in the process of "knowledge-making" in the climatic sciences (Mahoney, Hulme 2018, p. 399).

From a theoretical viewpoint, the aim of this present study does not significantly differ from that suggested by Mahoney and Hulme: the search for elements that can describe – "map" in a certain sense – the mechanisms of reception and review of climate sciences. There is a substantial difference, however, in the position of sciences on the climate. The object of study here will not be the internal mechanisms of building climatic knowledge, but its reception by a different epistemic-scientific community: that of nature conservation. The case provides an important opportunity to evaluate not only the capacity of scientific knowledge to circulate in different regions and scientific communities that differ in their geographical location (even although similar in their discipline), but also the effective capacity of different epistemic communities to incorporate rationales, scientific practices, and adaptive mechanisms that come from diverse scientific realities and diverse disciplines. In practice, the fundamental point will be to understand how scientific-epistemic communities that differ in the geographical position, study setting, scientific-conservationist culture, and specific ecologies in which they work, can receive, reinterpret and apply dictates coming from the climate sciences and boundary institutions, such as the IPCC – but in this case also the IUCN – which gather scientific information and enable it to have global and capillary circulation. It is hardly news that worry over climate change is unequally distributed over terrestrial surfaces (Orlove et al. 2014; p. 249), due to the practice of "selective recognition" deriving from the historical geographies of exploration, field work in a scientific environment, colonial exploitation, or post-colonial geopolitics (Mahoney, Hulme 2018, p. 401). The new-born – really as a result of the climate emergency – "adaptation science" is therefore the centre of attention:

“Adaptation science can be considered an epistemic ‘trading zone’ where global climate simulation intersects with field-based research on socio-ecological system and vulnerabilities” (Ibidem, p.401)

From this viewpoint, the protected areas are a perfect scenario for monitoring the spatial behaviour of these trading zones. Parks, reserves and national monuments, using an analogy with Livingstone's work, take on the role of laboratories for conservation science. The scientific literature warns against having excessive faith in the equivalence between the protected areas and ecological laboratories (Kupper 2014), but in our case the protected areas serve as laboratories for a sociological analysis of scientific interest. It is not so much the bio-geo-ecological processes linked to climate change that are the centre



of interest, but the relationship established between these objects of study, the fundamental scientific discourse on climate change, and the epistemic community of conservation in its local and regional geographical manifestations.

For the successful completion of such a study, it is indispensable to summon diverse tools of analysis belonging to the geography of science in all its guises: from scientometric and spatial-scientometric analysis to qualitative analysis aimed at a rereading of the scientific-institutional discourse underlying research production, without forgetting the validation of the theoretical framework derived from geographical theory. The study should therefore also be understood as a testing ground for integration between different methodologies which until now have rarely crossed paths.

## 2.2 THE STUDY OF CLIMATE CHANGE IN THE WORLD'S PROTECTED AREAS

Starting from the principles briefly listed in the foregoing, it is possible to provide a reading of the network of global research linked to the study of climate change in protected areas. For this end, the following provides an analysis of data extracted from the Web of Science to illustrate the current state of research. The dataset of articles (n=1086) has therefore been read and analysed from different perspectives, allowing a panoramic observation of the diverse characteristics making up the network.

The first question when studying the dataset concerns in this case too the temporal dimension. Tracing the birth and development of scientific interest in the effect of climate change on conservation is once again useful for understanding its true effect by means of the curve that describes its growth.

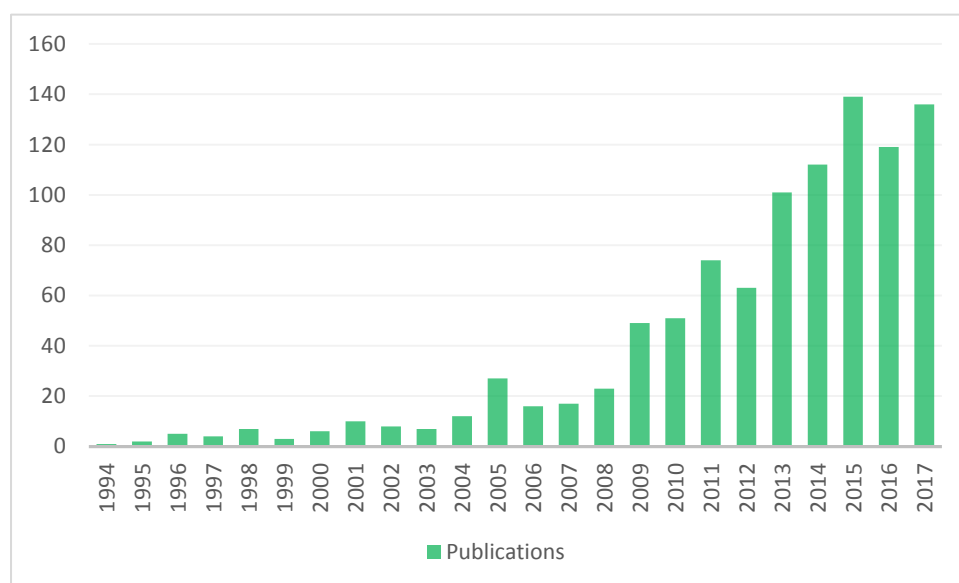


Figure II.1 temporal evolution (1994-2017) of the number of research studies produced on the subject of climate change in protected areas. Developed by the author on data from the Web of Science. Search term TS=(protected areas) AND TI=(climate change)

The graph shown in Figure 2.1 highlights the marked growth of the subject, above all from the beginning of the present decade. The five years 2013-2017 have the greatest value of the entire series, so defining an argument that has become increasingly more important in the scientific community in those years, touching 140 publications in 2015.

The second question instead examines the actual composition of the scientific community. Who conducts the research? In this case, the answer is certainly more complex. From the geographical viewpoint, the first useful step for understanding the true spatial composition of the community can be identified in the national composition of the research products shown in the dataset, so searching for how many and which states are involved, and to what extent. Figure 2.2 shows, by country, the principal producers of research on the subject.

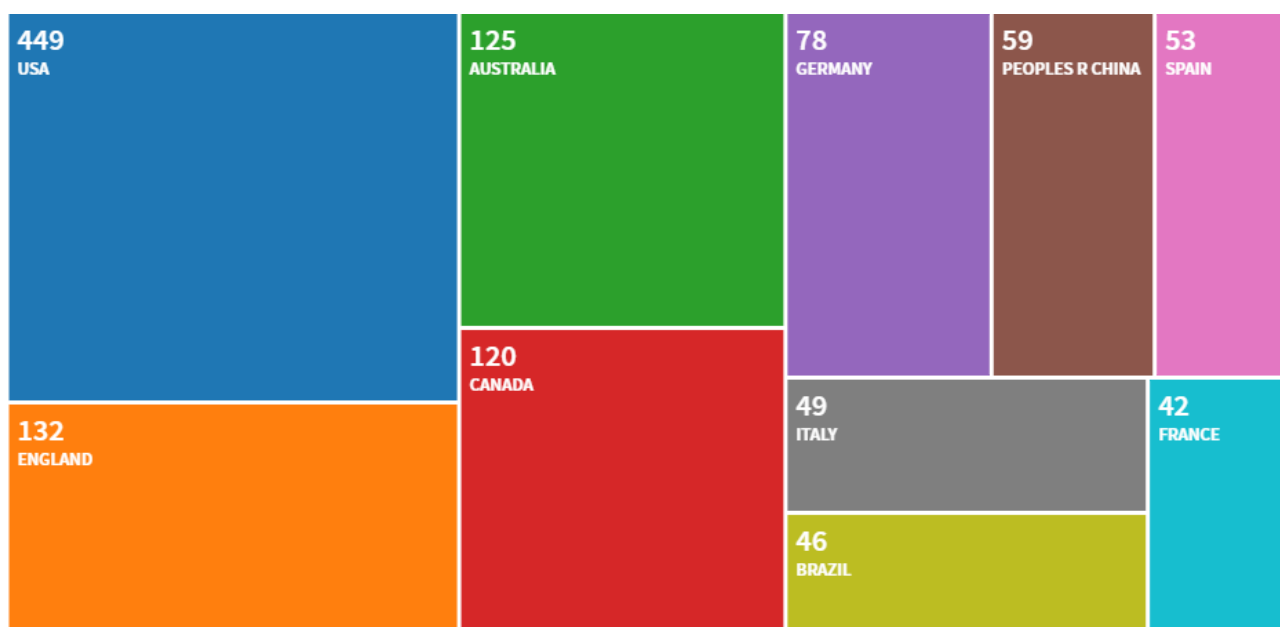


Figure II.2 The first 10 countries organized by gross output of scientific articles. Web of Science data

The international panorama is dominated by the anglophone countries, which produce the great majority of research articles, with the United States as the largest producer by a wide margin. Of particular interest for the purposes of this present discussion is the presence of three Alpine states – Germany, Italy and France – which, while not providing us with any indication of the centrality of the region within the international discussion, does give us an important piece of information on context:

three of the countries that are signatories to the Alpine Convention are of world excellence in primary research production on climate change in protected areas. By widening the field of observation to the first twenty-five countries, we find new evidence worthy of note.

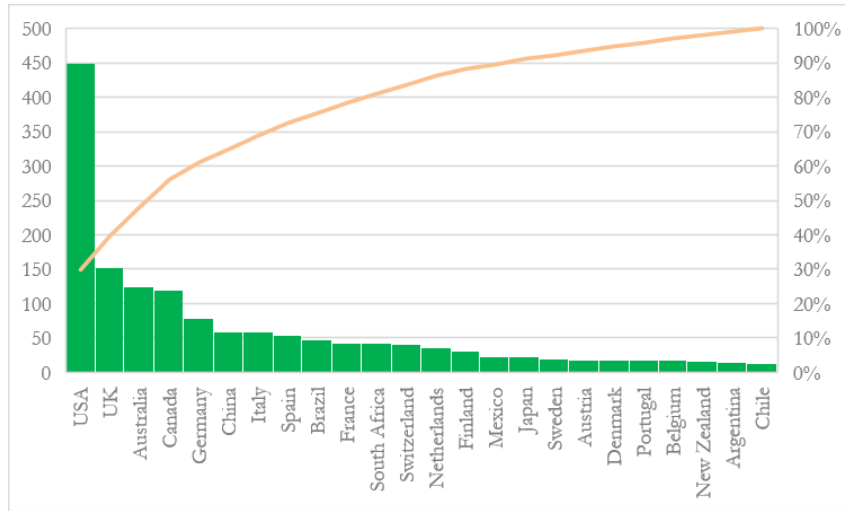


Figure II.3 The first twenty-five countries producing scientific articles in descending order. Developed by the author from Web of Science data.

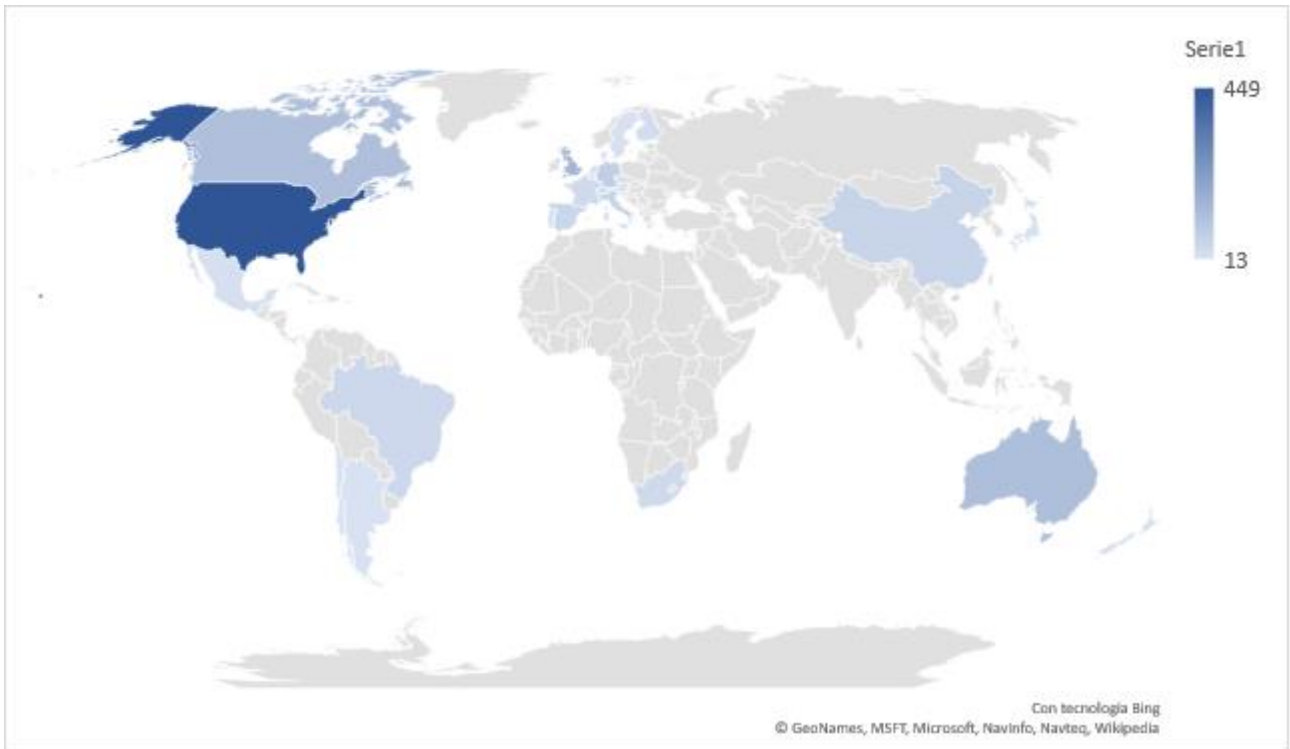


Figure II.4 Map of the top 25 countries. Data from Web of Science 1994-2017, layout made in Microsoft Excel

The study of climate change can be defined as a "north-western" practice: the spatial pattern emerges around the centrality of the North American cluster, accompanied by a secondary one in Europe. The first four producing countries alone count for 60% of the scientific output. The global spread of the studies is therefore sparsely distributed and tends to conglomerate in macroregions, above all in the northern hemisphere. The southern counterpart ranks few countries among the major producers, and this fact is certainly not surprising: in the sample examined there is a positive correlation ( $p=0.8$ )

between GDP (source: world Bank 2016) and the number of research articles produced. For further confirmation of what is suggested by the great north-western cluster, it is clear that the southern countries which produce scientific research on the argument are those economically developed and with a higher GDP, on the whole comparable to the northern countries: China, Australia, South Africa, Brazil, Chile, and New Zealand. To some extent, the problem of climate change as a cause of disequilibrium for the protected areas seems to be a problem that can only be investigated in a given condition of economic well-being. However, surprisingly, the data does not highlight significant correlation with the percentage of territory placed under legal protection for nature conservation ( $p=0.28$ ). Therefore it is not the number of protected areas or the total of surface area put under protection that is the driving force of scientific interest. A deeper examination of what the mechanisms are that encourage or hinder the formation of such interest will be a central argument in the sections following; for the moment, the analysis dwells on the geographical structuring of the international network and the uncovering of its components and relationships.

Once, therefore, the research hotspots have been identified, a further step can be made towards identifying the relationships between the different producer countries. Who engages in the greatest number of international relationships? Who is, by contrast, on the sidelines of international discourse? Which countries are most influential at a scientific level in international debate on the subject? What results do the metrics show in the case of the Alpine countries? To respond to queries such as those, a methodology has been chosen which has already been used in similar studies (Zuccala et al., 2016). The raw data extracted from the Web of Science were processed by means of the software VOSviewer's mapping algorithm (Van Eck, Waltman, 2010) and then extracted in the form of a Pajek (.net) file, to be processed further through the social network NetDraw's analysis software (Borgatti, 2002) by undertaking an analysis of the main measures of centrality (Degree centrality , Eigenvector , Betweenness centrality ) on the whole dataset selected. For the purposes of this study, interest will be focused only on the results pertaining to the first ten producing countries and to the more significant metrics associated with them, as well as on the situation in the Alpine countries, so as to understand the scale of their importance in the network.

Before continuing to the analysis, the key point of this type of analytic methodology needs to be made clear: each item of data relates to the production of scientific articles within a determined country or research institute; this means that the data refer to the geographical position of the institutions, but do not take into consideration the setting of the research; what is drawn here therefore is the position of the subject that undertakes the research, but not the object studied. There is therefore no need to commit the error of thinking that the north of the world is more studied than the south, or any other

inference about the location of the objects of interest. It is perfectly possible that the institutes of a given country have as their object of research the protected areas of a third country, or that international cooperation between advanced economies leads to the study of territorial reality in developing countries.

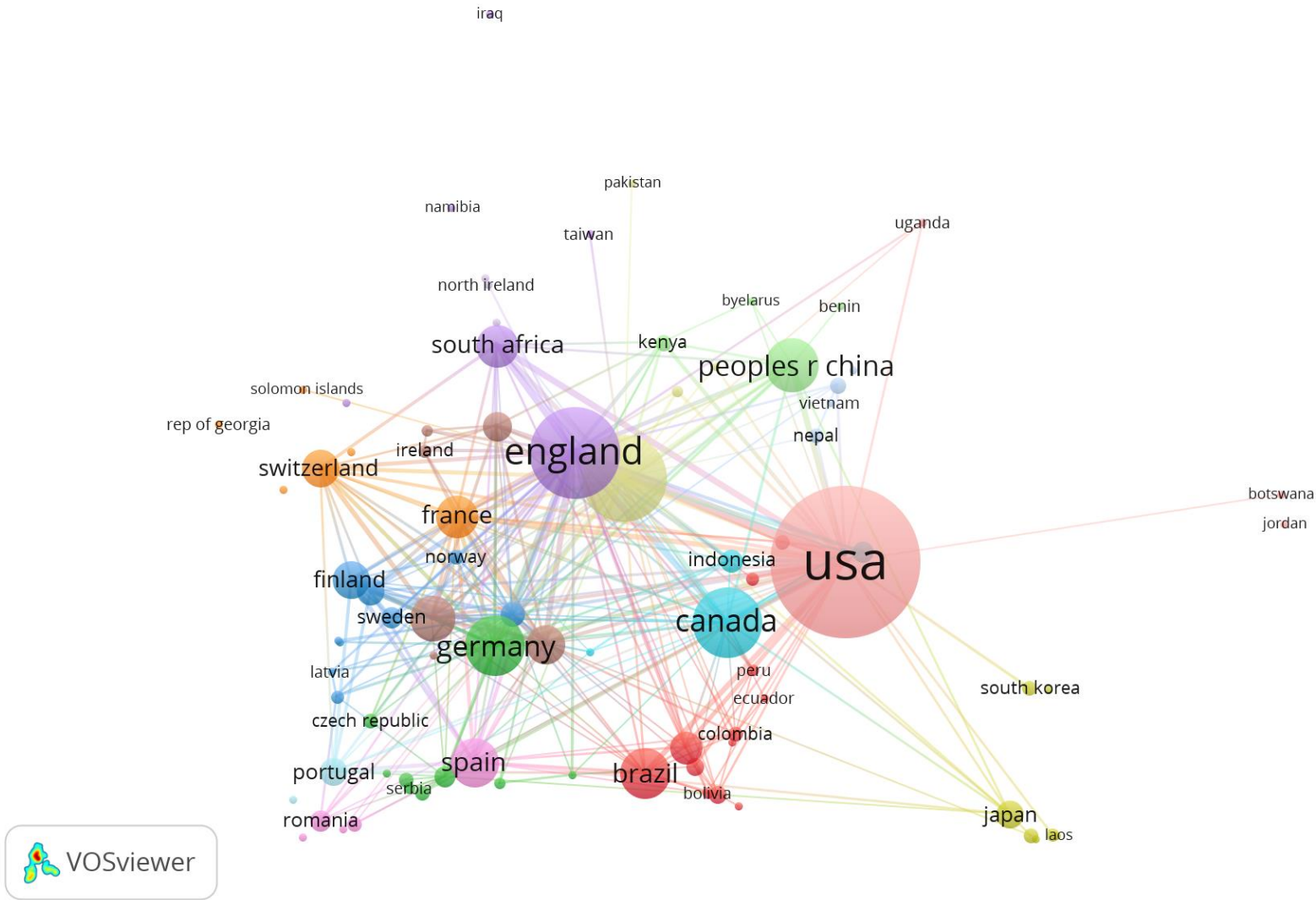


Figure II.5 Network map of the main producing countries. Developed by the author from Web of Science data

From examination of the network we can extract new information, above all as regards international scientific cooperation. The map in figure 2.5, structured around the data of co-authorship, and the metadata associated with it, shows us a more complex phenomenon. While the primacy of the United States remains clear in terms of volume production, the United Kingdom – and in particular England – shows the highest level of degree centrality and of connections with other producing countries ( $n=60$ ). In order to give further depth to the analysis, further metrics of centrality were applied, starting with the measure of eigencentrality, which gives us the capacity of one node to connect with the more important nodes inside the network. In this case too, the roles of the North American and Anglo-Saxon countries remain predominant, with England and the United States giving the greatest values. By combining the figure of centrality with that of raw production, it is clear how the United States are characterised by notably higher production than all the other countries incorporated in the network, but the figure of degree centrality ( $D_c=57$ ) underlines how their capacity to enter into international cooperation is slightly lower than that of the English, as is also their propensity for collaboration with the network's most influential nodes ( $E_v=0.25$ ). In the same way, the two countries cited above also show the highest level of betweenness centrality, highlighting their capacity for influencing the network and taking key positions in the circulation of scientific information. Values of lower centrality, but still within the highest of the entire dataset, are associated with Canada, Australia, and the four countries that are signatories of the Alpine Convention: Germany, France, Switzerland, and Italy. In the remaining cases, all the measures of centrality indicate marginal values in the overall economy of the network.

Moving attention to the scale of single institutions, the network extracted from the dataset is shown in figure 2.6.





The network of institutions reflects, as expected, the predominance of the anglophone institutions, but has new material on the distribution of the principal sources of scientific information within the group of predominant countries. From analysis of the composition of the clusters the absence of national or pseudo-national grouping becomes clear when talking of the creation of a network of scientific cooperation, which assumes a strongly international direction. Starting from this argument, it becomes possible to take the first steps towards an analysis of metrics.

The most fruitful scientific production, in terms of indexed research documents, belongs to the James Cook University, to the Nature Conservancy Institute, and to the University of Queensland (99th percentile). Within the 90th percentile is recorded, once again, the dominance of the North American countries, Australia and England (twenty-one out of thirty institutions in total). Within the 90th percentile – an important piece of information for our case study – is found the University of Montpellier 2, geographically close to the Alpine regions and – together with the universities of Helsinki and Copenhagen – unique among the non-British institutions in Europe in reaching this percentile. To come across an Alpine institution we need to descend to the 80th percentile, where we find the Grenoble Alps and Grenoble 1 institution.

From the viewpoint of degree centrality, once again, two of the three institutions making up the 99th percentile are Australian: James Cook University ( $D_c=47$ ) and the University of Queensland ( $D_c=41$ ), still divided by the presence of the international Nature Conservancy institute ( $D_c=42$ ). Within the 90th percentile are seven different international institutions (The Nature Conservancy, Conservation International, Wildlife Conservation Society, World Wildlife Fund, Birdlife International, Joint Nature Conservation Community, Equilibrium Res), while almost all the remaining institutions belong to anglophone countries, eight of them among conservation institutions and English universities. The one exception in the group is the University of Copenhagen. It is, moreover, interesting to note how the larger number of universities included in the 90th percentile are English ( $n=8$ ) and secondly Australian ( $n=4$ ). Only one research institute belongs to the United States (US Forestry Service) and none to Canada. To summarise, it is possible to state that on the level of relationships, the anglophone research institutes and the international institutions are the most active, with Australian universities being particularly prominent.

As for the other measures of centrality, betweenness and eigenvector basically reflect the situation already described by the degree data, with the University of Queensland ( $E_v=0.29$ ;  $B_c=941$ ) and Conservation International ( $e_v=0.29$ ;  $B_c=938$ ) breaking away strongly compared to all the other values in the dataset, so giving a picture of a panorama in which two institutions maintain strategic positions inside the network and display active channels with the other influential nodes.

Of particular interest at the geographical level is the configuration of the spatial patterns of distribution of research inside the individual states, which differ, even markedly, from case to case. One of the most illustrative examples of potential variability is given by a comparison between the USA and Canada, which occupy two of the first four positions for production of scientific articles. Analysis of the principal sources of research production dedicated to climate change in protected areas, however, shows fundamental differences: even though the United States are the first country in terms of overall scientific production, it is the Canadian institutions that gather on average the most consistent volumes of literature. While therefore Canadian scientific production is oligocentric and exhibits a very high ratio between research institutes and documents compared to the dataset ( $r=24$ ), with a few institutions acting as centres for the dissemination of scientific culture on the subject, American production is more widely distributed within the national territory ( $r=13.6$ ). In the same way, China shows a spatial structure organized around a few centres of scientific production and a ratio comparable to the Canadian ( $r=19.7$ ), whereas the three Alpine leaders in scientific production are differently placed inside the field of variability, with Germany settling around a value in line with that of the USA ( $r=15.6$ ), Italy with a less notable figure of concentration ( $r=9.8$ ), and France showing values close to the minimum for the countries with large scientific production ( $r=4.7$ ) and so a polycentric distribution without a real hotspot. The data for the top ten countries are given in table 2.1

Table II.1 Number of institutions, indexed documents and ratio between the two. Developed by the author from Web of Science data

	<b>Brazil</b>	<b>Australia</b>	<b>England</b>	<b>USA</b>	<b>Canada</b>	<b>Italy</b>	<b>France</b>	<b>Germany</b>	<b>Spain</b>	<b>China</b>
Institutions	6	21	27	33	5	5	9	5	8	3
Documents	20	125	132	449	120	49	42	78	53	59
Ratio	3,3	6,0	4,9	13,6	24,0	9,8	4,7	15,6	6,6	19,7

At this point it becomes necessary to summarize the main elements that constitute the particular geography of our scientific argument, before moving to a deeper interpretation. At a macroscopic level, the first fundamental element for the development of this type of research is given – intuitively – by the availability of investment in a scientific field, which largely excludes the institutions located in the southern hemisphere and a good number of developing countries. Once this fundamental prerequisite is established, the clearest data item consists of the centrality of the North American region, above all the United States, in terms of absolute production. From analyses of the networks extracted from the dataset, the measures of centrality have been calculated, all in agreement

with the definition of that region as the true epicentre of the network. Other areas with strong scientific production are Australia and England, which in many aspects successfully overtake the North American region for their global impact on the functionality of the network, as does Canada, which with the United States joins to form the North American supercluster. The majority of the Alpine states figure within the network, although with a marginal role and with no institution entering the number of the most influential according to the metrics of centrality and the volume of raw production.

Once this panorama has been defined, a similarly fundamental question remains to be dealt with, only touched on at the beginning of the preliminary statistical analysis: which factors determine or influence the confirmation of this particular geography of science?

To respond to this question, it will be helpful to turn our attention to the actual leader with regard to the investigation of our research inquiry. North America is the most important macroregion from the environmental conservation point of view: the first National Parks were created here, with Yellowstone acting as a forerunner and foundation stone for conservation – understood as a contemporary practice – throughout the world, and a large part of the scientific research linked to climate change in the protected areas has developed here, as is clear from the analyses of the network. This last element leads to further reflection on Livingstone's model used in the opening section: if in the past the scientific community was structured upon a network of peers, who shared access to places exclusively devoted to the building of knowledge and promoted a circulation of scientific products limited to members of this network, one of the principal effects of the transition towards contemporary Big Science, apart from the numerical increase discussed above, has been the inclusion of the scientific community in a far larger whole. The more restricted scientific community has been absorbed into a much wider epistemic community, composed of diverse actors: from policymakers to voluntary and professional conservationists, and to the scientists themselves.

In studying the practice of current conservation the consequences of this epistemic community's heterogeneous composition cannot be ignored, since it is to all effects a complete ecosystem. Scientific discourse has been enriched by new facets and new perspectives which channel it into a political-cultural dimension. To shed light on this particular complexity, it will be useful to turn to the analysis of a practice outside the normal conduct of scientific practice, evolved in parallel to the enlargement of the world's scientific community and the standardization of research products: scientific communication with the wider public.

### 3. THE GREATEST OF ALL THREATS. ANALYSES OF SCIENTIFIC-CULTURAL DISCOURSE ON CLIMATE CHANGE IN THE AMERICAN PROTECTED AREAS

*From the 1980s on, scientists gradually came to accept that a new sort of change was under way. The glaciers in Glacier National Park were shrinking, wildfires in Sequoia were getting larger, and coastal parks were losing ground to rising seas. Shortly after the turn of the century, researchers in Glacier announced that by 2030 even the park's largest glaciers would likely disappear. (Nijhuis, 2016)*

*We manage the giant sequoia forests now in such a manner that they can reproduce, but do we know whether or not that particular niche will allow those trees to mature in the future? Is there a place in the Southern Cascades, as opposed to the Sierras, that we should be thinking about planting giant sequoias so that they'll still be around a thousand years from now? That's the way we've got to be thinking. We are in the perpetuity business here, so that's the space that we're beginning to explore. (Than, 2016)*

Science is no longer the occupation of a few, thanks to the increase in the number of those practising it, and the circulation of its results is no longer limited to the network of scientists actively engaged in research but extends to different external stakeholders, who range from the policymaker to the single individual. Scientific communication has become a necessary appendix in the process of construction, legitimization and socialization of scientific knowledge: only through communication can the scientific community's own processes of world making (Mahony M., Hulme M., 2018) be opened up beyond the fields in which they began. The narration of scientific practices is in this sense a tool for the excellence of the spread of information. Its analysis therefore gives us, in an indirect fashion, information regarding the world of research and its relations with the other spheres involved in the management of the protected areas and the practice of conservation. At this point it is interesting to initiate a discussion, bringing to the reader's attention a number of extracts from literature in the field of scientific communication of the phenomena of climate change in the parks, concentrating upon analysis of the discourse underlying several general publications. The ultimate aim of this exercise of qualitative analysis is to understand what the drivers are, scientific or not, that lead to the creation of a hotspot of research or indeed to an entire scientific region, what the techniques are for circulation of information beyond the strictly academic circuits, and what the repercussions are in terms of visibility for the research subject.

Between the spring and summer of 2016, on the occasion of the centenary of the founding of the National Park Service, various news media dedicated articles to climate change and its impact on American protected areas. In itself the choice to tackle the problem during a symbolic period of such significance expresses the importance that climate change had assumed in the ambience of American conservation. This does not constitute proof that climate change was necessarily the priority to be tackled among all the threats posed to the conservation of species and the environment, but it certainly shows how the subject evoked fervour in environmental journalism and met with significant findings in the scientific literature. Among the articles appearing in different media online, of particular interest are those in National Geographic (August 2016), Vox (May 2016), SmithsonianMag (August 2016), The Guardian (August 2016), together with an article appearing on the Nasa Earth Observatory (May 2016), the National Space Agency's organ of scientific dissemination. The main common ground in all the articles was dictated by the centrality that climate change would play in the near future in the American park system. In this respect, Greg Breining reported in Vox a statement released by Jonathan Jarvis, director of the National Park Service, in which he describes climate change as "fundamentally the greatest threat to the integrity of our national parks that we have ever experienced". Climate warming actually poses a variety of dangers that range from alteration in the composition of the species that inhabit the parks to threats for the integrity of a number of elements of the abiotic substratum – glaciers and permafrost most markedly – and for the conservation of architectural artefacts belonging to the cultural heritage of the parks involved. The phenomenon affects heterogeneous objects, just as its consequences for the various fields of conservation are heterogeneous. Oliver Millman, in the article published in The Guardian, writes in particular of topics linked to the archaeological and architectural consequences:

*“Most people haven’t thought about how climate change affects archeological sites. A site is a snapshot in time, it’s not like we can pick it up and move it somewhere else. We are in danger of losing a great deal” (Millman, 2016)*

The immobility of archaeological sites at risk is a focal element in Millman's argument: they cannot be spatially moved, because their importance is linked to their localization. The author chooses to take examples connected to the most extreme environments of the United States' territory, Alaska and the states of the South-West. The selection of these two environments is in itself indicative of climate change's ability to edge its way – through various manifestations – into lands of climatic-environmental characteristics that are worlds apart. Alaska has twenty-four National Parks and is defined by Millman as "the front line" in relation to the advent of climate change, where the melting of the ice and the consequent raising of the sea level, joined to accelerated erosion because of increased intensity of storm

wind, are reclaiming increasingly large sections of coast. With its coastal territory, Alaska also risks losing historical settlements of the Thule and Inuit cultures. The National Monument of Cape Krusenstern is reported above all to be a critical area, where archaeologists are carrying out a census of the area before the ocean floods the study sites. Similarly, the South-West reports equal urgency, but caused by decidedly different phenomena. In the Tumacàcori National Historic Park of Arizona, several clay buildings, left from missionary activity of the three preceding centuries, have collapsed following extreme rainfall. These are buildings in which the park invests more than two and a half thousand hours of annual labour and are one of the reasons for the very existence of the protected areas, but climate change, in the words of one who works on their maintenance, is an unprecedented and pressing threat:

*“Meyer said there is a ‘great urgency’ to intervene and save cultural sites at risk from a rapidly warming planet. ‘The longer we wait to act, the more history we lose,’ she said.”* (Millman, 2016)

The focal point – or at least among those more widely discussed – of all the other articles mentioned comes down to the bio-ecological consequences of climate change. The survival of several species is not guaranteed in a climate that is warmer and marked by temporal distribution of rain and snowfall different from today's. Over-severe thermal systems, more frequent drought periods, and early melting of the snow cover are all elements able to influence profoundly the composition of the ecological communities. Climate change will actually make some areas unfit for species settled in the protected areas, just as it will end up by benefitting others, some of which are not yet found in the parks. Kathryn Hansen is the author of the article most concerned with presenting the scientific evidence gathered from researchers working in the protected areas. She reports on numerous studies, connected to very varied geographical contexts, always calling attention, on the one hand, to the dimension of "measurability" of the current disturbances dictated by the climate and, on the other, to the dimension of modelling as a tool for visualizing possible futures in a panorama steeped in uncertainty. Hansen further highlights how the eastern forests of the United States are composed of a wide range of plant species, some common (*Acer rubrum*, *Fagus grandifolia*), others much rarer, but sources of sustenance and habitat (*Prunus serotina*, *Tsuga canadensis*), and the present complexities of foreseeing their future in terms of survival and possibility of competition with new species, which place the park managers involved in decision processes in difficult situations. In response to these uncertainties, Hansen's article refers to a study carried out by Patrick Jantz and Brendan Rogers of the Woods Hole Research Center based upon the development of a forecast model of the distribution of 40 plant species met within the protected areas of the Delaware Water Gap National Recreation Area (Pennsylvania and New Jersey), the Shenandoah National Park (Virginia), and the Great Smoky Mountains National Park (North Carolina

and Tennessee). The model's results show how a number of species typical of the eastern forests of the United States, such as the silver maple (*Acer saccharinum*) and the Canadian hemlock (*Tsuga canadensis*) will lose part of their habitat, whereas some oaks (*Quercus marilandica*) and walnuts (*Carya texana*) will find optimal conditions in the warmer and drier new climatic regime and so more ideal areas for their propagation. On the western coast, in Yellowstone Park, the situation is not dissimilar in Hansen's narrative, with characteristic species such as the Douglas fir (*Pseudotsuga menziesii*), sub-Alpine fir (*Abies lasiocarpa*), or lodgepole pine (*Pinus contorta*) destined to lose part of their own distribution area, with a particularly grave situation for the whitebark pine (*Pinus albicaulis*). The probable victors in the new climatic niches will be in this case the population belonging to the juniper family.

Up until this point Hansen's approach to the subject does not differ from that of the scientific publications from which she derived the information cited, and she takes a careful look at the scientific community and their practices, without however widening the discourse to other stakeholders involved in conservation. Hansen's narrative is closely connected to the role that the scientific community should – and does – carve out in the management of conservation's future. To do this, Hansen describes in detail the tools developed and their practical application, examining above all their use as a planning instrument to respond to the emergence of management problems linked to climate change. The author stresses how the community of scientists belongs to a much greater whole, but never abandons her scientist-based viewpoint in favour of other members of the much wider conservation epistemic community. Her objective is that of showing what the scientist's role is and what it will be, just as she outlines its responsibilities and limits:

*“You’ll never find a decision of importance in the National Park System where you can simply say ‘someone did this and it led to that,’ Gross said. ‘The problems we’re working on are big, complicated, and involve a lot of people. We’re not at the helm of the battleship. We’re just one of a number of groups nudging it in the right direction.’”(Hansen, 2016)*

Hansen's treatment of the subject is kept, moreover, to a strictly professional level in outlining the figure of the scientist, without examining in depth what the mechanisms are that build a scientific interest – at a personal and community level – and how these influence the birth and development of research projects, something which, by contrast, is central to the next articles examined here. These tie themselves to the discussion of changes in the biological communities and to how scientific communication can be focused upon another type of information, not strictly dependent on technical data, but bound to the dominance of conservation policy and its fundamental values. To recall a term used by the British geographer Jamie Lorimer (2005), a fundamental consideration in the growth of the attention dedicated to themes of climate change is provided by the so-called "charismatic species",

species which are immediately recognizable and particularly linked to existing conservation policies and the daily practices necessary for their implementation. The charismatic species play a key role not only in communicating the research results, but also in building scientific interest itself. To understand fully the concept of charisma associated with non-human organisms is therefore a fundamental prerequisite for further analysis of the interconnected narratives. Lorimer defines “non-human charisma” as “the distinguishing properties of a non-human entity or process that determine its perception by humans and its subsequent evaluation”, and adds: “*Non-human charisma emerges in relation to the parameters of different technologically enabled, but still corporeally constrained, human bodies, inhabiting different cultural contexts*” (Lorimer, 2005; p. 915). In his analysis of the different types of charisma, Lorimer identifies three possible, and strongly interwoven, articulations of the concept: “ecological” charisma, “aesthetic” charisma, and “corporeal” charisma. The first is the basis for the development of a charismatic relationship of any kind whatsoever, because it is bound to the behaviour of the organism and its interactions with the environment, which together determine the “detectability” of the subject by the human. Form, colour, geographical distribution, temporal habits, and day-night ecology are all elements that regulate our effective capacity to “perceive” the organism, so creating the indispensable basis on which all other types of charisma are founded. The second type is intuitively linked to the physical appearance of the organism: aesthetic charisma does not bind itself unequivocally to one characteristic or a series of necessary physical characteristics, but ranges from a form of appreciative recognition for engaging traits to reverential admiration for forms of feral charisma. Finally, corporeal charisma refers to the emotions and affection that humans develop in contact with certain organisms, linking them therefore to their life experience (ibid; pp. 915-921). By using this concept and its articulations as a key to interpretation, the underlying discourse of the articles can be analysed more successfully, above all in relation to the work of Michelle Nijhuis and Ker Than.

Ker Than reported in the *SmithsonianMag* on the scientific campaign linked to the study of the vulnerability of the American pika (*Ochotona princeps*) in view of the rise in temperatures and shortages of snowfall. The five-year study of the National Park Service, begun in 2010 under the title *Pikas in peril* aimed to evaluate the winter risk for the population settled in the Lassen Volcanic National Park, in northern California. The pika, which only lives in rocky habitats, binds its survival in winter to the presence of a snowy stratum able to act as insulation, keeping its minimum temperature under control. The pika's susceptibility caused the National Park Service to examine the potential effects of climate change on the mountain ecosystems, exploiting the animal's popularity – unanimously appreciated for its aesthetic appearance – as a driver for research and the communication of the effects of climate change. It is the pika's aesthetic charisma, therefore, that enables the research and its use as a catalyst for interest in the theme of climate change on the ecosystems. Even where they do not become part of



long-term scientific research, the charismatic species remain at the centre of the discussion on the conservation policies and practices carried out in the parks, posing concerns that range from local to national, depending on the species involved. Charisma is not actually an a-geographical concept, but is instead subject to the effects of its explicit scale, outlining specific geographies. Than reports the case of the karner blue butterfly (*Piebejus melissa samuelis*), widespread in the recent past in the Indiana Dunes National Lakeshore but which after a particularly hot spring in 2012 suffered a severe decrease in its population because of an unexpected ecological mismatch : the high temperatures led to early hatching of the eggs and the caterpillars were deprived of their necessary sustenance, normally provided by the wild lupins on which they feed, due to the desynchronisation of the phenological cycles of the two species: the lupins' inflorescence should have already developed by the time of the hatching. The main fear today is of having to state that the butterfly, particularly loved by those who visit the protected area, is locally extinct . The numerous deaths through malnutrition left the park management powerless, and now forced to ask questions about the future oversight of the biomass in face of the threats from climate change.

If the story of the butterflies of the Indiana Dunes National Lakeshore tells of a serious conservation problem, but still only of local interest, Than, and also Michelle Nijhuis in the pages of the National Geographic, present a problem that is potentially similar in its nature but much greater in its magnitude, given the extremely charismatic dimension of the species involved. The Sequoia and Kings Canyon National Parks are home to these eponymous trees, recognisable titans throughout the world and the very symbol of the National Park Service, evergreen conifers at risk from the threats of climate change. Up until today, however, the threat remains more on the virtual level of forecasting models than in actual reality, in which only a number of episodes of water stress have been recorded. The species currently at risk are those which coexist today in the parks' forests, the Californian incense cedars (*Calocedrus decurrens*), pines and firs, above all at lower altitudes. Yet the National Park cannot do otherwise than face the problem and – at the very least – initiate a debate to arrive at a policy of shared conservation:

*What if Sequoia National Park became too hot and dry for its eponymous trees? Should park managers, who are supposed to leave wild nature alone, irrigate sequoias to save them? Should they start planting sequoia seedlings in cooler, wetter climes, even outside park boundaries? Should they do both—or neither? (Nijhuis, 2016).*

The dilemma of the sequoia creates the preconditions at this stage for exploring in further detail the paradigm of conservation adopted by the American parks, discussed by all the articles cited. In 2012, the National Park Service published an updated document about the cornerstone of their

conservation policies – the earlier “Wildlife Management in the National Parks”, informally known as the Leopold Report – now entitled “Revisiting Leopold: Resource Stewardship in the National Parks”, a version brought up to date and now required by the growth of the phenomena of contemporary environmental changes. The Leopold report, written independently in 1960 by the biologist Starker Leopold – son of the conservationist Aldo Leopold, among the founding fathers of American conservation, above all in his scientific dimension – and commissioned by the Secretary of the Interior, Stewart Udall, proved to be extremely influential. Leopold drew the attention of the Park Service to the necessity for maintaining the "biological associations" preexisting before European settlement; from that point the NPS engaged in controlled burning of forests in which wildfires had been systematically suppressed, and in the reintroduction of species that had disappeared but belonged to the "original" ecological community, such as wolves and the wild sheep of the rocky mountains. However, the final aim of Leopold's programme was not by nature ecological, but purely iconic: to recreate "*vignettes of primitive America*". This static vision is obviously invalidated by a basic error which Nijhuis recognises and highlights: Leopold considered the environment found by the first colonists as "virgin nature", ignoring the influence that the native Americans' hunting and "slash and burn" farming activities had on the environment of the parks. Similarly, Leopold's ecological vision ignored the fact that nature left to herself does not tend towards static equilibrium; ecosystems and landscapes undergo continuous change from the disturbances of fire, drought, flooding, and indeed biotic interactions. The iconography of the parks was what ought to be conserved, and with it, but only as an indispensable instrument for the success of the undertaking, the ecology of the equilibrium associated with that type of landscape and setting, so as to reclaim the idea of virgin nature, untouched and uncorrupted by human activity. Anyhow, despite its ultimate purpose, the Leopold report led to a series of practices aimed at maintaining the ecological equilibrium associated with the natural landscapes of which the individual protected areas are the custodians, from controlled burning to the reintroduction of a number of species. All the authors cited here consider revision of the Leopold report as a key moment for providing the NPS with the conceptual and operational tools for restructuring the very idea of conservation. The static settings yield to continual change, the ecology of equilibrium, with its unchangeable landscapes, gives way to ecological integrity and cultural and historical authenticity, the idea of the park considered and administered as an island, a discontinuity in the land's fabric, is replaced by the concept of the park as the node inside an interconnected network. Nijhuis, Than and Breining take advantage of these paradigmatic revolutions to introduce problems of management linked to conservation practices which should emerge from the new policy theories. The focal point is probably to be sought in the sphere of conservation ethics: the introduction of practices for managing continual change has proved to be complex and without unanimous solutions. To accept the change – at all its

levels, from the smallest biological communities to the scale of the landscape – also means not having complete control over the transition from one state to another, just as it compels definite choices to be made about objects of specific interest for which there is no longer a clear standard of custodianship. As Than says, “There was a time when the notion of letting prized native species die out seemed heretical. Now the agency is bracing for the possibility that some of the species under its care simply won’t make it”. The discussion enters fully into a background narrative linked to "winners and losers of climate change" which has become central to the communication of scientists, conservationists and park managers. For the first time, the NPS accepts the possibility of seeing some of the species under their protection disappear and therefore, as a result, changes to the ecosystems and protected landscapes. The response of the conservation epistemic community, however, is not unanimous. There are views that disagree with the non-intervention position, which find substance above all in the practice of "assisted migration", an argument touched upon by all three authors and significant in a relocation handbook for the target species.

The thought experiment described by Nijhuis and reported above centres on one of the most charismatic species of North America, obliging the reader to face the limitations of the earlier Leopold report, but also the ambiguity inherent in the new conservation model proposed by the NPS: how can a conservation that embraces change as an inevitable phenomenon manage the risk of the disappearance of one of the very symbols of the NPS? Should it assume positions of intervention and go straight to planting seeds beyond the species' normal dispersal range, in more suitable climatic conditions? Or should it leave the ecological equilibrium to find a solution on its own, possibly causing the sequoias to disappear from the protected area, without, moreover, any guarantee that they will unassisted find a usable climatic niche?

Nijhuis' example, exploiting the charisma and iconicity of the species, expresses with considerable effect a doubt that whichever species populate the protected areas, they can be thought of indiscriminately, by forcing them into the spatial trap. Obviously the "correct" solution for resolving the thought experiment does not exist, just as the debate on the new practices of adaptation to climate change remains open and contains various possible solutions, but it is important to note how the debate has become central to the formulation of NPS policies:

*“Among all the federal land management agencies, they are probably paying the most attention to climate change – says Bruce Stein, the National Wildlife Federation’s associate Vice-president of conservation science and climate adaptation – That isn’t to say that they are doing uniformly well, but there are a lot of people within the park service who are really being thoughtful about this...they are openly having those conversations and engaging*

*in the kind of scientific investigations that are going to be essential for answering tough questions” (Than K., 2016).*

Among the conservationists' proposals there is also a triage procedure, of which both Breining and Than make explicit mention. By means of this procedure the community can state which of the species is potentially worth concentrating the conservation efforts on, and which, by contrast, should be considered beyond the NPS' practical possibilities. A cornerstone of the decision-making procedure is obviously the scientific research applied in the individual parks, unique in providing the necessary information for an internal debate, which, however, will prove insufficient if viewed as the sole conveyor of objective data, of the thresholds, of the boundaries beyond which every conservationist effort is considered pointless. “We did not say ‘here is the point at which you give up something’. What we did say is that there is going to be a need to have those hard conversations and to review what our conservation goals are or should be” (Than., 2016). Implementing choices with a strong ethical value can be difficult for the public to understand, as they will consider it unjust that a conservation agency does not try to safeguard a species resident in a protected area and indeed paradoxical that its members sit around a table to decide which species should be helped in their fight for survival and which should instead simply be "left to go".

If examined in parallel, the articles show common points in the narrations developed. The first common factor is the personal scale of the treatment: all the articles cite directly, and with the same words, the experiences of the scientists involved in research linked to the climate. If some of the articles analysed limit themselves to reporting the scientists' descriptions and statements, others enter into the personal dimension, telling of the often daily practices that structure the researchers' days in the field:

*“ ‘There he goes, there he goes!’. Michael Magnuson lowers a battered pair of binoculars, pointing to a rocky debris field a short distance away from a visitor parking lot in Northern California’s Lassen Volcanic National Park. The National Park Service wildlife biologist has just spotted his quarry: a small, round, rodent-like mammal that darts between boulders and tufts of red mountain beather while clutching a leafy branch between the boulders, a rocky sanctuary against the hot July sun. [...] Having a cool shelter is crucial for pikas in the summer in account of their thick fur. If they sit in the sun too long, they get too hot’ Magnuson explains. He points out a typical pika home that he has identified based on the mounds of scat surrounding the entrance. ‘They typically prefer the bigger rocks, because there is more space underneath them’ he adds. ‘If you stick your hand under, it’s several degrees colder. It’s pretty cool, literally’. [...] Questions of species conservation are complex, and thus there are no easy answers. Irrevocable changes are already sweeping across the parks, and freezing them in time to echo a bygone era is no longer possible, if it ever was. For now, even though the Pikas in Perils project*

*has ended, Magnuson continues to survey Lassen's pikas yearly. He visits about 100 sites every fall, scanning the landscape for signs of little haystacks. I'm just making it a priority to keep the project going". (Than K., 2016)*

The extract above shows a rhetorical strategy based upon publicizing the daily life of the experts directly involved in conservation. By telling Magnuson's story, Than highlights how the problem of climate change is pervasive for those addicted to this work: not a theoretical and solely speculative interest, but a reality dropped into working life that reorganizes the very practices that make up the professionalism of the conservationists. They cannot do otherwise, in the face of the overpowering entrance of climate change, than dedicate their competencies to it. The author also points out how the scientist's or conservationist's devotion is strongly dedicated to their project, to the point of making it a priority, even after their official deadline: a priority that remains in this ambiguous intersection between the scientific level and the emotional one. Nijhuis pushes this intersection into the spotlight, working out the ambiguity and showing almost explicitly the emotional dimension, that which Lorimer defines as resulting from a process of "learning to be affected" (Lorimer, 2015; p.54) on the part of the conservationist about the object of interest.

*"High in Sierra Nevada, floodlit giant sequoias tower into the night sky. They can live 3000 years, but California's historic drought has tested them. 'We are treating this drought as a preview of the future' says ecologist Nate Stephenson. [...] When Nate Stephenson was six years old, his parents fitted him with boots and a hand-built wooden pack frame and took him backpacking in Kings Canyon National Park. For most of the 53 years since Stephenson has been hiking the ancient forests of Sierra Nevada. 'They are the center of my universe' he says. Soon after he graduated from UC Irvine, he packed up his Dodge Dart and fled Southern California for a summer job at Sequoia National Park. Now he's a research ecologist there, studying how the park's forest are changing. While park managers are often consumed by immediate crisis, researchers like Stephenson have the flexibility – and the responsibility – to contemplate more distant future. In the 1990s this long view became deeply disturbing to him. He had always assumed that the sequoia and foxtail pine stands surrounding him would last for longer than he would, but then he considered the possible effects of rising temperatures and extended drought, he wasn't so sure – he could see the 'vignette of primitive America' dissolving into an inaccessible past. That realization threw him into a funk that lasted years". (Nijhuis, 2016)*

In this case Stephenson's personal story is not treated from the viewpoint of the redefinition of the daily practices that structure his expertise, but rather on the level of the emotional link that connects him to the protected area and its forest. Stephenson is an expert, but in this article – unlike the treatment by Hanson in particular, but also by Breining and Millman – it is not the viewpoint of the technical scientist that the journalist is interested in writing of, but his capacity to care deeply about the

future of these species, this ecosystem, this landscape, because he has learnt, thanks to his training and his life, to connect himself to the characteristics of the environment. Nijhuis is approaching the scientific subject of conservation as a social practice, in which the knowledge of techniques and technology is connected to the socio-cultural dynamics of the research community. The scientific interest is not presented as a merely technical curiosity, that is to say as a "pure science", but is a mixture of experience, fear, hope, worry, and satisfaction that these feelings can be traced back to the realm of the personal and their own lives. In these circumstances, the quotation marks are bound perfectly to Tuan's theories on affection for places (Tuan, 1990) like Lorimer's theories on affection for certain species, which is formed on the basis of a significant meeting, often in one's youth (Lorimer 2015, p.51). Nijhuis' ultimate aim is to show the reader the pervasiveness of climate change, its capacity to penetrate inside the scientific community not only on the technical level but invading it on more intimate dimensions. By presenting the scientist as, first of all, a human being connected to everyday places and ecosystems, Nijhuis means to indicate the priority that climate change constitutes for conservation: not a scientific priority, but a civil priority, linked to conservation of the common weal, which can be bound to anyone's personal experience, including those outside the community of scientists.

The second point in common in all the articles examined arises from this awareness of the pervasiveness of global warming: the view of climate change as a cultural object, which enters into the realm of conservation, not only penetrating the scientific practices and lives of the individual researchers, but also the policy that regulates the conservation. In recalling the Leopold Report the authors mean to show how this management tool is culturally out of date as regards the emergence of the problem. Climate change needs an effort from the community of conservationists in redefining the paradigms of their tools: technological, technical, legislative, and – above all – cultural. In their treatment of the problem there is therefore no lack of references to the inter-connections between the scientific world and that more strictly of policy. If on the one hand the articles belong to a corpus of shared scientific literature, they end up by presenting, each to a different extent, thoughts that are linked to a value-driven framework. Science can be – and ought to be – a principal instrument of enquiry for understanding the profound transformations that will invest the protected areas in response to changes in the climatic regime, but will not necessarily be the solution to the problems posed, because the most important game will be played on the field of shared values that the parks and protected areas should represent and defend in a climatically unpredictable future. In order to convey this message, the articles are accompanied by images with a strong iconic content: glaciers in phases of advanced melting, forests hit by drought, protected monuments with new structures built against the rise in sea levels. This all contributes to the formation of a specific iconography that materializes the

problem unequivocally, demonstrating its effects on culturally precious scenes, whose protection is key to the mission of the NPS. We are not talking here simply of a spatial relocation of objects of conservation interest, of species moving north or to higher altitudes, or of a future with uncertain water supplies, but of the cultural power that the images associated with these processes have in "materializing" climate change. To cite the American philosopher Timothy Morton in his *Hyperobjects*, "stand under a rain cloud and it's not global warming you'll feel" (Morton T., cit.): to convey climate change in its entirety is a formidable challenge (Marini A., Tolusso E., 2016; p.10), but first describing it through some of its local manifestations lays the basis for it to be represented and put across, taken outside its strictly scientific dimension and rendered as, indeed, a recognisable cultural phenomenon.



Figure II.8 The Garden Wall ridge in the Glacier National Park. The advanced ice ablation is by now a common trait in the Rocky Mountains. Source Nijhuis 2016, National Geographic



Figure II.7 The visible effects of drought in the Sequoia-Kings Canyon National Park. Nijhuis 2016, National Geographic



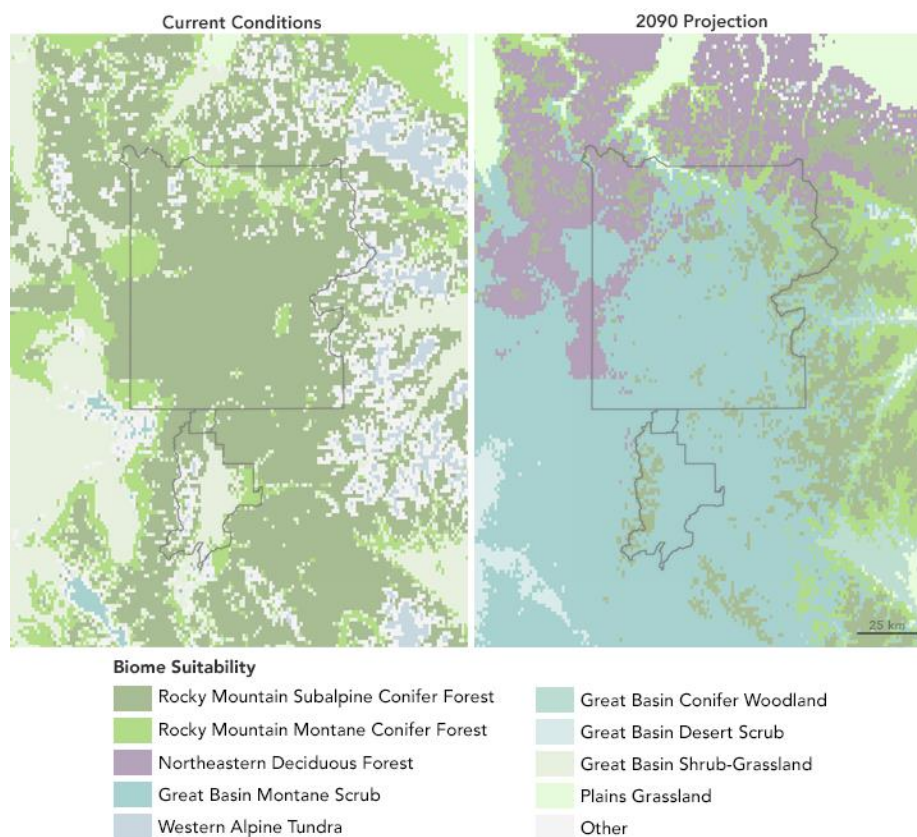


Figure II.9 Current distribution of the biomasses in the Greater Yellowstone Ecosystem, on the left, and in the future according to a forecast model. Source Hansen 2016, Nasa Earth observatory

The discussion merits particular attention with reference to Kathryn Hansen's article. The author introduces an element of division from the other articles in the corpus examined, replacing (largely) the images of iconic landscapes put at risk by climate change with visualizations of data and scientific tools. Hansen's is a choice which allows observation of the typical iconography with which scientists visualize and rationalize the effects of climate change and the observation of a phenomenon of world making which originates from a part of the epistemic community, then to radiate through all its parts. Just as Nijhuis and Than use images loaded with a recognizable significance for the majority of the population in order to convey successfully the tangibility of climate change as a (physical-)cultural phenomenon, Hansen discloses a cultural representation belonging to a more specific, more authoritative, and for these purposes more legitimate group, in that they are a fundamental part of the decision-making process linked to its management. The author introduces elements of a graphic alphabet which normally does not enjoy the same circulation capacities as naturalistic-landscape photography, but actually add to the narrative and provide new elements with which to characterise the climatic phenomenon on a cultural scale. At the same time, Hansen implicitly credits science and its

mechanisms as an indispensable tool for the management of protected areas in response to current climate change.

The third common factor is the geographical extent. Considering the five articles analysed, the number of protected areas from which the source information was extracted (twenty-four) is not inconsiderable, giving us an indication – broadly and far from being complete, but still significant – of the geography of science linked to climate change in the protected areas in America. The distribution of the protected areas cited is polycentric, including above all areas of the two coasts, no matter what the latitude, such as Alaska. The spatial distribution of the points of interest makes yet more explicit the capacity of climate change to exercise an influence on very disparate environments: if in the coastal areas the problem of fundamental management is determined by the rising of sea levels and in the areas of the extreme North the melting of the permafrost creates structural problems for historic buildings, at the intermediate latitudes the fundamental questions range from alteration in the composition of species to alteration of the frozen landscapes of the Rocky Mountains. So it emerges clearly how the geographical dimension of climate change embraces the interest of the American parks system in all its territories and how it is able to connect to different themes, linked from time to time to specific traits of the individual areas protected. The map derived does not allow the tracing of true climatic hotspots; although several of the National Parks are cited in more than one article, such as the Glacier National Park or the Joshua Tree National Park – both examples in which climate change constitutes a threat for the very *raison d'être* of the two areas protected – the majority of the areas mentioned are cited in only one article. The map cannot therefore be understood as a tool for creating hierarchies of places of the greater or lesser influence of climate change with reference to conservation priorities, but as a revelation of different localities which, to greater or lesser extents, contribute to the creation of a scientific-cultural discussion which is geographically anchored but which because of the capillarity of its spread has become international, combining cases of National Parks of almost worldwide reputation to examples of protected areas of local importance.

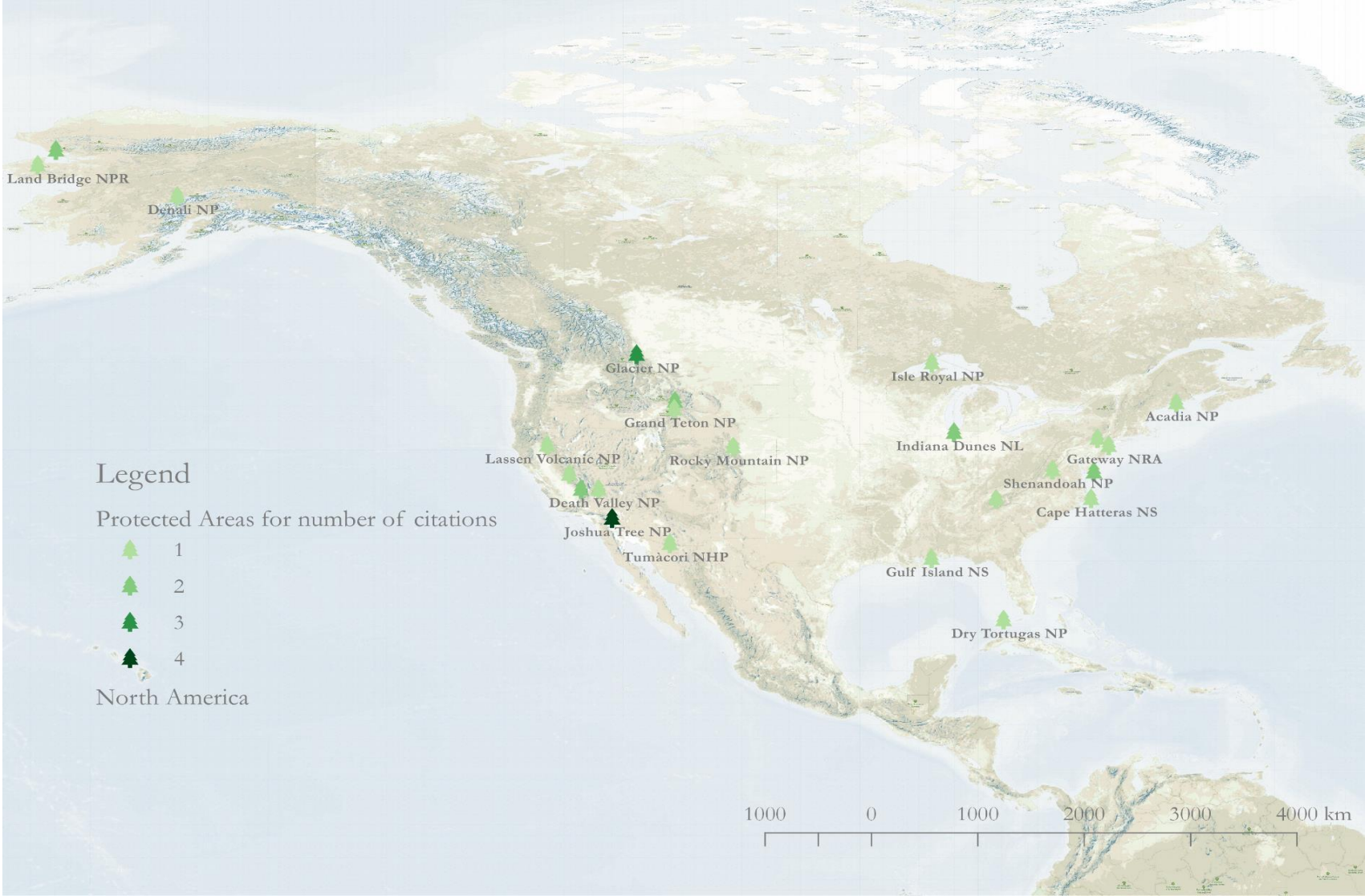


Figure II.10 Distribution of protected areas cited in the articles analysed. Developed by the author.

A further point of the analysis is linked by contrast to the fundamental narrative that the articles produce on the unfolding of climate change, on the central message conveyed. The geographer Jerilynn "M" Jackson, in a publication of 2015, highlights how the narrative of the melting of the glaciers on a global scale tends to equate glaciers in strong phases of ablation with the idea of "ruins", an object beyond equilibrium as regards its own climate and so in a phase of disappearance, in which what is visible today is already interpreted as a ruin: "Ruins are thus broken bits of former bodies, reminiscent and recognizable of what once was, cannot be separated from their original location and, importantly, are quite power-laden"(Jackson , 2015; p.483). The result is a narrative of resignation, in which the figure of the glacier – in the singular, because the narration itself tends to unite the complex reality of thousands of glacial bodies with their geographical peculiarities into one ideal body – is fated to be lost in time, assuming tones of inevitability. Jackson further emphasises how this type of narration is diametrically opposed to that which surrounds the species at risk: they are not considered "lost" and the discourse that develops around the node of their conservation calls for action, for protection, for active opposition to save them (ibidem, p. 480). From this point of view, the protected areas contain both the objects of interest, just as they contain – potentially – both the narratives that conflict with each other, without necessarily finding a point of equilibrium. From the articles both perspectives emerge, anchored to the new strategies of management of the parks system, which embrace the dimension of change as necessary: assisted migration, climatic zoning and refuges all constitute active measures to counter the losses, which however are not excluded from the range of managerial possibilities. The glaciers of the Glacier National Park are probably destined for disappearance, and yet the park will remain in custodianship of scenes of value. In the same way, the possible disappearance of the eponymous trees of the Joshua Tree National Park will not decree the end of the park, which will instead remain in protection of something new and inevitably different. The dimension of the loss is strongly rooted in the discourse perpetuated by the authors, as is the necessity to prepare for its inevitability. Yet the scenarios of uncertainty that characteristic climate change and its management do not allow us to establish what the victims of the process will be with any clarity. The rhetoric of these articles, therefore, is not comparable to the resigned tone of that surrounding the glaciers, but stresses the centrality of management and the active role that it will have in the future of the protected areas. The authors highlight the challenges of the future, seeing in them the potential devastating effect for the conservation policy adopted until now, but they all agree in visualizing a future in which, despite environmental and administrative changes that climate change will bring, the American parks will still be present and central to the American people's lives. Once the consequences of the composition and distribution of species, of glacial melting, and of the conservation of individual monuments have been analysed, the focus of the argument therefore shifts to the scale of the individual park, if not the entire

system of the protected areas. The authors have made public the message of uncertainty that is linked to climate change, and therefore continue the discussion on a more settled level, highlighting how the parks, while profoundly changed on biological and geomorphological levels, will still exist physically and will still play an active role in community life, in the training of the public, in fulfilling their recreational and conservationist functions. What will change profoundly will be the objects which the protected areas will be expected to safeguard and the messages which they will be able to convey.

*“Even then, he says, ‘the parks won’t cease to exist’. In a Glacier without glaciers, people will still watch the grizzlies. Parks altered by climate change will still protect wide swaths of wild land, harbor a variety of wildlife species, and protect valuable cultural sites. But the loss of familiar or namesake resources, such as Glacier’s glaciers, he says, ‘will provide a teachable moment.’ (Breining, 2016)*

*Like the Park Service, visitors must learn to accept that their favorite park might change. “People ask, ‘Will I still be able to enjoy it? Will my kids and grandkids be able to enjoy it?’ ” Davis says. “The answer is yes, they will. They might not enjoy it in the same way, and they might not get here the same way. But they will still be able to enjoy it.” (Nijhuis, 2016)*

*“NPS director Jarvis says that if the parks are to survive another century, there is no question they will have to change. He gives the example of the iconic Joshua Tree National Park in California. ‘We may not be able to maintain Joshua trees in Joshua Tree National Park, but that doesn’t mean that Joshua Tree National Park is somehow devalued,’ he says. ‘It will just become home to something new.’” (Than, 2016)*

In conclusion, the analysis of the discussion provides a useful tool for understanding different characteristic features of ways of approaching the public on the problems of climate change in the parks, starting from the narrative that gives uniform significance to the data, images and experience derived from extremely heterogeneous geographical contexts. The channels through which the message is conveyed already offer indications of the importance that it carries for the scientific and epistemic conservation community: international newspapers and publications, whose catchment area extends well beyond national boundaries and which serve as fundamental platforms for focusing media attention on climate change and its effect on the natural and cultural heritage that the parks system is called upon to protect. From analysis of the discourse it is also possible to extract information regarding the rhetorical strategies used in telling the stories linked to global warming and to understand how they disclose information about the object of the study but also about the people who are actively studying it, giving insight into several means by which interest – scientific and subjective – becomes trained at an individual and community level. In the same way – and perhaps still more successfully – the discourse analysis reveals the heterogeneous nature of the debate on climate change, which is based

equally on scientific, political and cultural concerns. To obtain information on a problem such as climate change through the analysis of public discussion enables us to acquire essential preliminary information that can best guide a deeper analysis of the sources that must be considered in the study: sources of a scientific nature and sources of a political-cultural nature. From this subdivision arise the next steps towards understanding the epistemic geography that characterizes the study and management of climate change at different levels and in different regional contexts. Should the scientific, cultural and policy concerns already cited, on which the debate on climate change is based, be considered constants or variables in geographical analysis? And again, how and to what extent should the two realms of information – science and policy – interact in defining different regional geographies?

#### 4. CONSERVATION POLICIES AND CATALYSTS OF SCIENTIFIC INTEREST

From the discourse analysis, therefore, is drawn the detailed picture of a particular geographical singularity, which can be used as a standard for the search for elements that can be held in common.

From the viewpoint of decision making, the authors show how administrators and conservationists have need of two basic classes of information: scientific data and values. If the first are a necessary tool for monitoring the consequential direction of the change, the second constitute indispensable indications on the objectives for which science must play an instrumental role. The discourse analysis has clearly highlighted how the value systems involved are not linear and not even necessarily consistent with each other. The conservation policies, from a certain viewpoint, are required to gather the whole complexity of values that characterise conservation and its practices and codify them in programme documents. Moreover, in spite of the division between the two information classes, in practical terms a separation into discrete elements is complicated: conservation science and policy do interact and influence each other. The policy can organize the scientific project around the two cardinal themes and indicate strategic direction of development. The results, the instruments and processes of research construction, for their part, can indicate to the policy which paths will be the most productive, achievable, and compatible with resources and competencies. This is why understanding the reason for a particular regional geography in contemporary science also involves the policy dimension in a way that is difficult to separate from the purely scientific realm, above all in the case of conservation, understood both as a practice and as science. The theme of relationships between environmental science and environmental policy – not only those of conservation – is not new for geography: the case of the IPCC has already been widely studied, highlighting how institutions of this scale play a fundamental role by indicating which instruments and paradigms are policy relevant (Turnhout et al.,

2015). Being policy relevant is inextricably bound to the epistemic dimension, which shows us which science is important not from the policy view but from that of knowledge making. The influence in this case begins from the policy dimension, which directs research towards themes and usable tools in the processes of power production. Turnhout, Dewful and Hulme use precisely the example of the IPCC. Among its actions towards globalization, the IPCC seeks an aggregation of scientific data and the provision of a spatial scale of reference for the different studies, a world scale. By creating a number of benchmarks for the realization of policy, relevant science parameters are also formed that decide which research studies and knowledge forms are epistemologically legitimate and important (Turnhout et al., 2015; p. 66): this is the case in the IPCC's average temperature indicators and its Global Circulation Models (GCMs) which veer towards a scientific perspective rather than that of other potential competitors in knowledge making. A contemporary geography of science should fully consider these considerations on the link between the importance of research to policy and the forms of epistemic legitimacy generated by it, just as it ought – as a priority – to overcome the globalizing tendencies promoted by the boundary institutions to understand what the diverse regional geographies of science and the scientific policies regulating them are. The biology of conservation, moreover, was born as a "science of the crisis" (Soulé, 1985) and as such operates at all levels, including value judgements, by actually defining a discipline that cannot, to some extent, avoid being value-laden (Baumgaertner, Holthujizen, 2016). In this attempt to configure in a measurable way the relation between humans and nature and to safeguard those natural and anthropic elements that are facing risk situations, the negotiation over which scientific tools and paradigms are most important at the epistemological level becomes complex .

The policy is a holder of values which the community – any community, from local ones to epistemic-scientific or whatever other communities are thought of – projects upon a given object and which, if broken down into its basic parts, can replace other prime elements that in their turn provide a catalyst for the formation of a precise scientific interest. The geographical variability of the value systems associated with conservation can therefore be a key to understanding the different concentrations of scientific studies within geographical regions that do not together show important imbalances among the socioeconomic parameters of development.

Turning therefore to the case of the United States, the first salient point underlined in the policy document is to be found in the cultural dimension which the environment occupies within American discourse, a direct legacy of the country's environmental history. The protected areas, although restructured within a coherent ecological discourse, maintain a dimension of monumentality: their specific iconography is made of centuries-old sequoia, of glaciers, of charismatic species. By acting on

their presence, persistence and geographical distribution, climate change is claimed as a force able to change structurally several of the environmental characteristics that contribute to the process of the importance of place. This awareness is reflected in the policy document widely cited by the authors, the Leopold Report, which introduces ecological variability as a condition that cannot be deferred in the process of environment conservation, which must, however, maintain those same aims that were expressed in the original Leopold report:

*“The overarching goal of NPS resource management should be to steward NPS resources for continuous change that is not yet fully understood, in order to preserve ecological integrity and cultural and historical authenticity, provide visitors with transformative experiences and form the core of a national conservation land- and seascape”*  
(NPS Advisory Board Committee, 2012; p.11)

The forces pushing the NPS to a reform that embraces the change are not limited to climate change, which, however, is explicitly a fundamental part of this need. The document further states the centrality of science in the processes of adjustment and management of the values which the NPS is there to guard, actually calling on the scientific community to concentrate upon policy relevant research:

The NPS needs a specific and explicit policy for park stewardship and decision making based on the best available sound science. [...] Best available sound science is relevant to the issue, delivered at the appropriate time in the decision making process, up-to-date and rigorous in method, mindful in limitations, peer-reviewed, and delivered in ways that allow managers to apply its finding.

From this detectable state of affairs at the policy level we can, indirectly, also detect some of the reasons for the United States introducing this business of concentrating on research linked to the effects of global warming on the protected areas.

Analysis of the policy documents can therefore reveal the fundamental reasons for a cluster, hotspot, or entire scientific region arising and developing. Still looking within the American cluster, the Canadian case is probably a yet more significant example of policies of adjustment to climate change, because it is endowed with a very structured policy document with particular commitment to the IUCN areas Ia, Ib, II, and III . The conservation policies initiated here all have a double objective, attainment of which is imperative: to preserve the integrity and ecosystem representativeness (Lemieux et al., 2010). Canada depends on a huge proportion of national territory destined for conservation, estimated at around 10.6% (CCEA, 2008), there to care for the strong environmental range of the land, home to ecosystems that extend from the Arctic to Carolina, following the latitudinal axes from north to south. The richness of the ecological systems has therefore been assumed as a founding value for the whole architecture of conservation policies, albeit with diversity in the aims and functions linked to individual



sites. For this reason the processes of adjustment to climate change are focused on a plan on the scale of the country – understood as a network of ecosystems – of a bioregional type, in which the protected areas are connected in the form of a network to guarantee integrated management of the biological legacy and the exchange of information (Lemieux et al., 2008). The structure of the areas in the network has been adapted to the reasonable needs of a climate that is changing, forming guidelines for future planning around the creation of areas of stricter biological conservation (core areas) and less rigorous areas to guarantee access to natural resources (buffer zones). A similar division, laid down by the IUCN in their guidelines, joined to the creation of other "infrastructures for biodiversity", will allow a management adapted also to different geographical areas. The idea of adaptive management is set out clearly and embraces measures of geographical flexibility for the protected areas, to the point of introducing innovative proposals within the categorization of soil use, such as the floating protected areas, temporary protection areas, and temporal corridors, which can be used to allow migration in a given period. Experimentation also finds a place in the Canadian proposals, such as the Evolutionary Baseline Parks, protected areas intended for the study of the transition between ecological balances and ecosystems (CCEA, 2008). The dynamic planning will provide a new instrument for combatting climate change and maintaining ecological integrity and representativeness:

*“Comprehensive, physiographically-based representation schemes should manifest more resilience as shifting species and biotic communities may have greater opportunity to re-colonize sites in new protected areas similar to those lost to invading climate regime in their place of origin”. (CCEA, 2008)*

From the viewpoint of scientific production, it is acceptable to expect that Canada will develop productive lines of research on the link between populations and climate change, dynamics of the metapopulations, movements of the biogeographical areas, monitoring – or at least programmes for monitoring – of the ecological integrity and representation, which are the key values of the entire conservation policy. A first analysis of the scientific production is given in Figure 2.11.

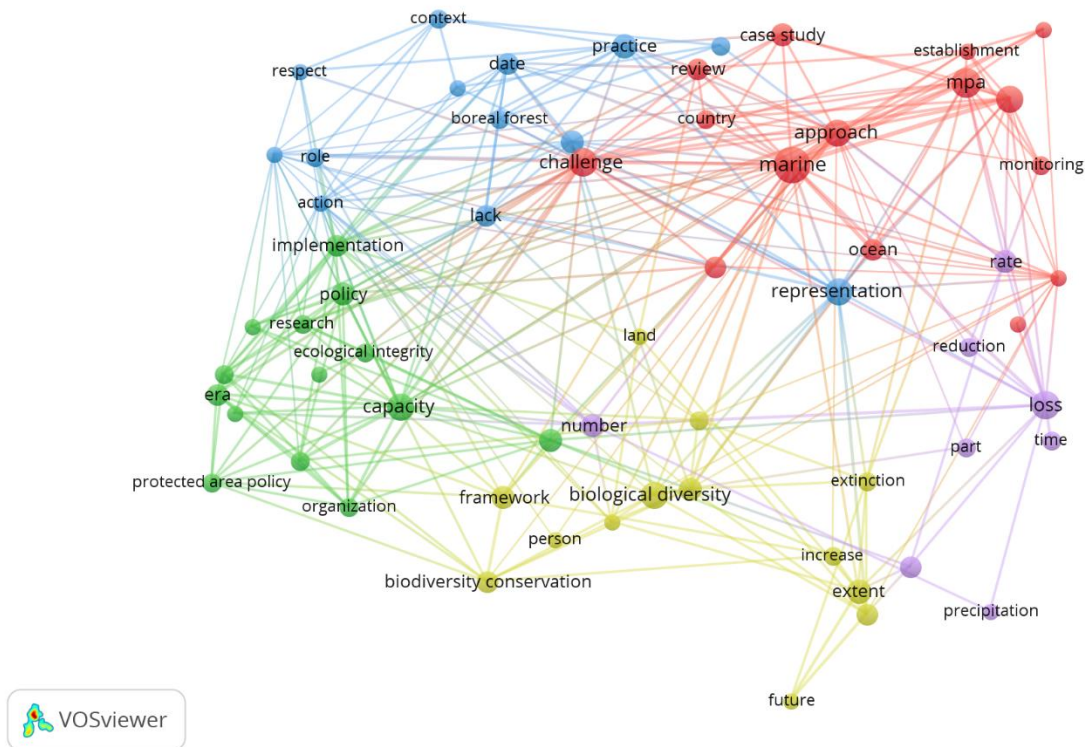


Figure II.11 Term-map of the Canadian literature. Data from Web of Science. Visualization in Vosviewer

In effect, from a first visual analysis, the map highlights all the key-terms that summarize the Canadian programme document (ecological integrity, representation, biological diversity, biodiversity conservation), showing fundamental harmony with the scientific community's research directions. The centrality of the protected marine areas stands out in a quite marked way, definitely dominant compared to the land reserves and the typical environments of continental Canada: the sole example inside the network is represented by the boreal forests. Several of the terms linked to the hypotheses of management of the Canadian park system are missing: there are no traces of floating protected areas, temporal corridors, or other innovative infrastructures but there are nevertheless references to policies and practices. Also interesting is the tight connection between research and policy. Obviously, the analysis only provides preliminary indications that are insufficient for appropriate descriptions of the explicit case, which falls outside the specific interest developed in the present study, but it is useful for confirming a reality already clearly seen in the American case: a specific policy towards climate change is shown by the scientific community's particular attention to the subject under consideration. Clarifying the nature of the link between policy and epistemic importance, in the Canadian case too, is not appropriate for this present study.

With this first, general cartography to portray – or at least to sketch out – the particular geography of science linked to enquiries on the effects of climate change in the protected areas on a

global scale, it is possible to pass to analysis of the Alpine case. In doing so, all the considerations that have been expounded up until now need to be borne in mind, on the conditioning of scientific interest and its catalysts, and on the sources that can be investigated to give meaning to the spatial configurations obtained from analyses of the data. This is therefore the moment to ask: who conducts research on climate change in Alpine areas? What are the objects most studied? And where is research particularly concentrated? Which protected areas are most studied?

### III. Putting (climate change) science in its place

#### 1 CLIMATE CHANGE AND PROTECTED AREAS FROM EUROPE TO THE ALPS

The complex discourse developed by the IUCN around the challenges that climate change brings to the future of PAs (see paragraph 2.1) is obviously scalable to the case of the Alps. The new climate regime can be a threat to species and ecosystem protection, as well as to the normal conduct of conservation practices. The IUCN World Commission for Protected Areas (WCPA) addressed the general policy lines drawn by the IUCN, which have already been downscaled to macroregional levels, including the continental scale. Other than the already mentioned example of Canada, Australia displays articulated policy documents regarding the effects of climate change in PAs (Dunlop, Brown, 2009), intended as assessments of climate change's effects on the Australian PAs' system. The reports provide overviews of the state of knowledge for policymakers, thanks to the combined efforts of the Climate Change Department and Parks Australia. The positive correlation between the existence of policy documents addressing the topic and a strong body of research records has already been highlighted in the previous chapter. Despite the wealth of different assessments of climate change and summaries for policymakers provided by NGOs and other institutional bodies, addressing different spatial scales, comprehensive policy documents, especially guidelines, are uncommon.

At the European level, such a document is represented by the publication “Guidelines on Climate Change and Natura 2000. Dealing with the impact of climate change On the management of the Natura 2000 Network of areas of high biodiversity value”, edited by the European Commission. This report, building upon the foundations laid down by the Commission White Paper on Adapting to Climate Change – Towards a European Framework for Action (2009) and the EU Strategy on Adaptation to Climate Change, stressed the role of ecosystems in tackling climate change, while analysing the impacts of the new climate regime on biodiversity in the Natura 2000 site. Coherently with the IUCN guidelines, the document focused on the implementation of adaptive management in these sites and policy strategy addressing the problem on a higher spatial scale, comprising a concept that is proving to be significant and highly policy-relevant for the Alpine macroregion: the creation of ecological connectivity. The central dimension of adaptive management is clearly a testament to the role of science in the PAs' future, as all of the proposed measures need strict scientific support and monitoring in order to be effective.

However, before coming to the case of the Alps, it should be acknowledged that the document, even if probably the most structured, is not the only expression of a growing interest towards the topic of climate change in PAs. The Europarc Federation promoted a meeting in 2017 on the topic of “Changing climate – changing parks”, hosted by the Julian Alps Transboundary Ecoregion. The meeting, involving – among others – members of the European Parliament and Commission, widely addressed the topic of climate change in Parks and PAs. Nevertheless, the Europarc federation's interest in climate change took a more concrete form in the same year, but in a different region. Europarc Spain published a manual on adaptation to climate change for PAs. The publication, “The protected areas in the context of climate change. Incorporating adaptation to climate change in planning and management” , while highlighting how little, if any, attention is given to climate change, focuses on the existing scientific data that can drive adaptation processes:

The implications of climate change for the operation of ecosystems are already perceptible and extremely abundant evidence is available in the scientific literature. [...] that evidence has been collected on the effects of global change at all organizational levels: changes in genetic variability, in physiology, in demographic structure, in phenology and the lifecycles of many species, in distribution patterns, or in ecological processes such as productivity, material cycles and, in short, changes in the provision of services to society. (Mezquieda et al., 2016, p.22).

The document stresses, step by step, how “the entire process must be based on the best scientific evidence available” in order to be effective.

Even if of evident importance in the development of a comprehensive approach to climate change in European Parks, the work carried on by the federation is neither the only nor the first example. In particular, signs of concrete concern came three years earlier from the Alps.

In 2014 the Alparc federation organized a workshop in Gran Paradiso National Park titled “Monitoring biodiversity transformation to document climate change impacts in Alpine protected areas”. The workshop gathered scientists and PA managers and stressed the centrality of the topic of biodiversity monitoring in regard to climate change. In this context, the need of international cooperation in the field of climate change impacts on biodiversity has been highlighted, together with the laboratory role that PAs can assume for research addressing the topic (Alparc, 2014). The availability of trained staff for observation and samplings, of monitoring infrastructures and long-term visibility of monitoring plots were considered the main reasons for the prominence of these geographical contexts in climate change research. Moreover, the workshop consisted of a series of presentations highlighting the work of the scientific monitoring network. Alparc also published its own introductory guide to managing

biodiversity in a time of climate change in PAs. The document, entitled “Biodiversity in time of climate change: management or wilderness?” and published in 2010, comprises a short theoretical analysis with some practical examples of adaptation in the conservation domain, and some interviews with park managers and scientists. However, the guidelines have yet to assume a more systematic, encompassing form.

Despite this significant manifestation of interest, climate change is not at the centre of a unified guideline for the Alpine microregion. It is evident that climate change is today an integral part of many general management and policy guidelines, but still, a central, unified focus on formulating a strategy is missing for the macroregion. However, the prominence of climate change in the Alpine context is clearly visible in one of its most central and comprehensive steering documents, *Alpine Nature 2030. Creating [ecological] connectivity for generations to come*, published by the German Federal Ministry of the Environment. The document revolves around the need for fostering connectivity among otherwise isolated PAs, which would otherwise witness diminishing results in their efforts to conserve nature. Among a plethora of causes are the genetic isolation of species populations, the reduction of suitable habitats, and the fragmentation of the matrix in which small patches of protected land are located. The document does not address the issue of climate change directly, but many of the contributions consider climate change as one of the main drivers fostering the need for adaptation (see Svadlenak-Gomez, p.13; Plassmann, p.21-31, Tabor, McClure p.44; Scheurer, p.86; Walzer, p.106, Santolini et al. p.107) as they try to introduce a paradigmatic shift in the ways conservation has been practised and managed for the last 100 years. The macroregional initiative can be ascribed to the broader movement of landscape-scale conservation, which aims at the redefinition of the entire scale in which conservation is today taking place, overcoming the model of the island in favour of the “whole ecosystem”. This paradigm introduces the need to conserve the land between reserves as well as the PAs themselves, taking account of species migration, gene flows between different populations, the integrity of the environment, and ultimately, the inclusion of people in nature protection initiatives (Adams, 2006). In the Alps, ecological connectivity is not only alive on paper, but is at the centre of projects and frameworks of implementation, as in the case of the Ecological Continuum Initiative promoted by the joint work of CIPRA, ISCAR, ALPARC, and WWF. On an operational level, the alliance promotes the development of an on-the-ground-project, named “Econnect. Restoring the web of life”. This project, nearing its end in 2018, aims at enhancing ecological connectivity across selected regions of the Alpine range. Climate change adaptation plays a role in the whole project since it is centred on fostering the possibility of species migrations, especially in the light of climate change .

The growth of policy documents and conservation initiatives is an obviously unmistakable sign of how much climate change awareness enters into different social worlds and does not stay confined to the scientific domain. However, the Alpine macroregion still has to provide unified guidelines for climate change adaptation in PAs. At this point, we shift our interest back to the main concern of this work: what is the state of climate change research in Alpine PAs, especially in the light of its policy-relevant status?

## 2 SCIENTIFIC RESEARCH IN ALPINE PROTECTED AREAS

The role of science in PAs is recognized as central by many documents addressing the contemporary policy of conservation (IUCN, 2016). Additionally, scientific research is an integrated task for most managed PAs in Europe, with the goal of creating the necessary knowledge for the implementation of evidence-based management (Scheurer, 2016, p.242). The task is particularly important in the light of undergoing global and regional changes. However, previous reviews have often underlined the gap between the theoretical role of science in the management of PAs and the actual relevance the role holds, despite notable exceptions (ibidem). On a normative level, science should be expected to play the role of the innovator in processes of adaptation to global and regional changes, but, as noted by Scheurer (p. 242-243), in order to fulfill this task, science must “be focused on fundamental questions related to global and regional change, and should be interdisciplinary and long-term in design”, and additionally “the interface between science, park management and regional governance has to be strengthened in order to enhance exchanges of knowledge and mutual learning. However, it should be noted that the relationship between science and PA management can be handled materially in many forms, from the establishment of a scientific department, in charge of conducting research and fostering co-operation with external scientists, to the organization of scientific councils or boards, in charge of steering and overseeing research conducted in PAs. Despite the existence of such organs, we still lack a solid understanding of the dynamics they promote at this interface. In a recent study, Arpin et al. highlighted how the Alpine landscape is characterized by the coexistence of different organs working at the interface between science and management. Scientific departments, as well as scientific councils, display an uneven distribution in the Alpine range; nevertheless, “there is no overview or general assessment to their contribution to bringing together scientists and PAs practitioners and to fostering boundary science” (Arpin et al., 2016, p.5). Additionally, the very definition of a scientific council is a broad one: scientific councils of Alpine PAs can be situated along a gradient between science and management, as some of them are strictly concerned with proposing and evaluating scientific activities, while others are more involved in advising managerial boards on

management issues (*ibid*, p. 8). Hence, it is challenging to understand univocally their role in selecting and promoting policy and management relevant science, and, more precisely, their role in promoting climate change research.

As an integral part of the global change process, however, climate change can be regarded as one of the main fundamental questions in the future of PAs, and consequently an enquiry into the state of climate change research should constitute a valid benchmark if we are to test the commitment of PAs to managing some of the main effects of global and regional changes.

As a first step, climate change research can be analysed by mining data from the Web of Science core collection. First, some descriptive statistics can be derived, in order to help to better grasp the scope of scientific efforts in the Alps and the main disciplinary composition of research on climate change, and put this information in an international perspective, comparing neighbouring and morphologically-similar geographical regions to the Alps.

From the point of view of the research articles indexed, Alpine PAs are the most studied among the major mountain ranges worldwide, proportionally to the data highlighted in the previous chapters on general research on climate change conducted in mountainous regions (see figure 1.1). The research records set within the boundaries of the Alpine macroregion often outweighs the number of records addressing the national-scale of the most part of the signatories of the Alpine convention itself. A preliminary look to the data indexed reveals that among the countries with a dataset overlapping partially the Alpine one from a spatial standpoint, only Italy can count on a larger body of literature ( $n=66$ ). It is clear that Alpine PAs are a very prominent setting for climate change research in Europe.



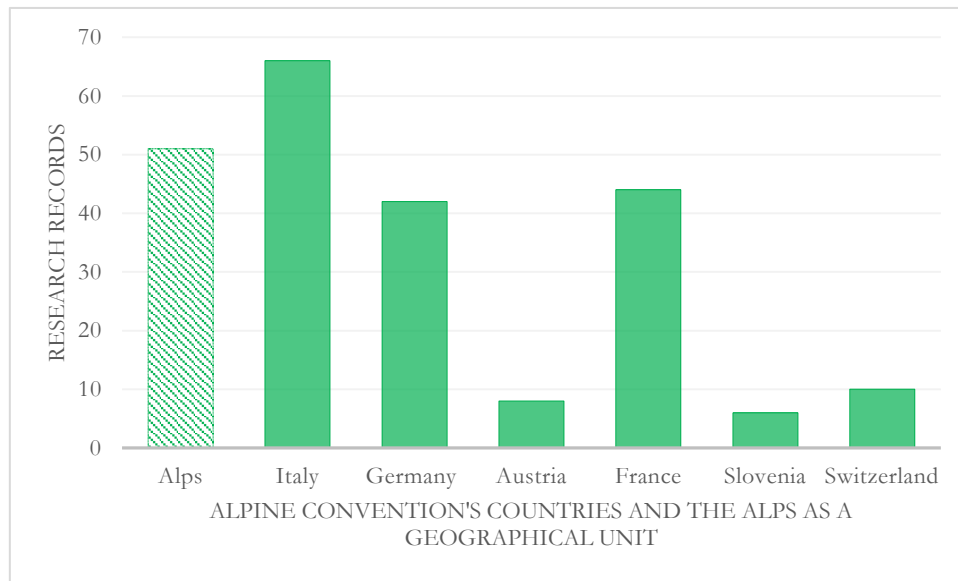


Figure III.1 Climate change research records in PAs across different regional scales

However, as already discussed in chapter 2, the dataset is rather small if compared to the world's most important producers of climate science records, i.e. the USA, Canada, Australia, and the UK. Additionally, it has to be noted that some of the most iconic or largest PAs of the World are deviating sensibly from the norm. The dataset related to Yellowstone National Park, for instance, doubles in size the one related to the entire Alpine range ( $n=100$ ), while the Ross Sea Marine Protected Area, the second largest on Earth, nears the same mark ( $n=83$ ).

From a research composition point of view, the disciplines involved in research in the Alps are compared to the other main mountainous regions in terms of research records indexed (figure 3.2). The inclusion of an article into a disciplinary cluster derives directly from the original WoS category. PAs in mountainous regions throughout the world are sharing a common multidisciplinary framework, with slight regional differences. However, the dominance of research records in ecology and environmental science can be taken as a constant.

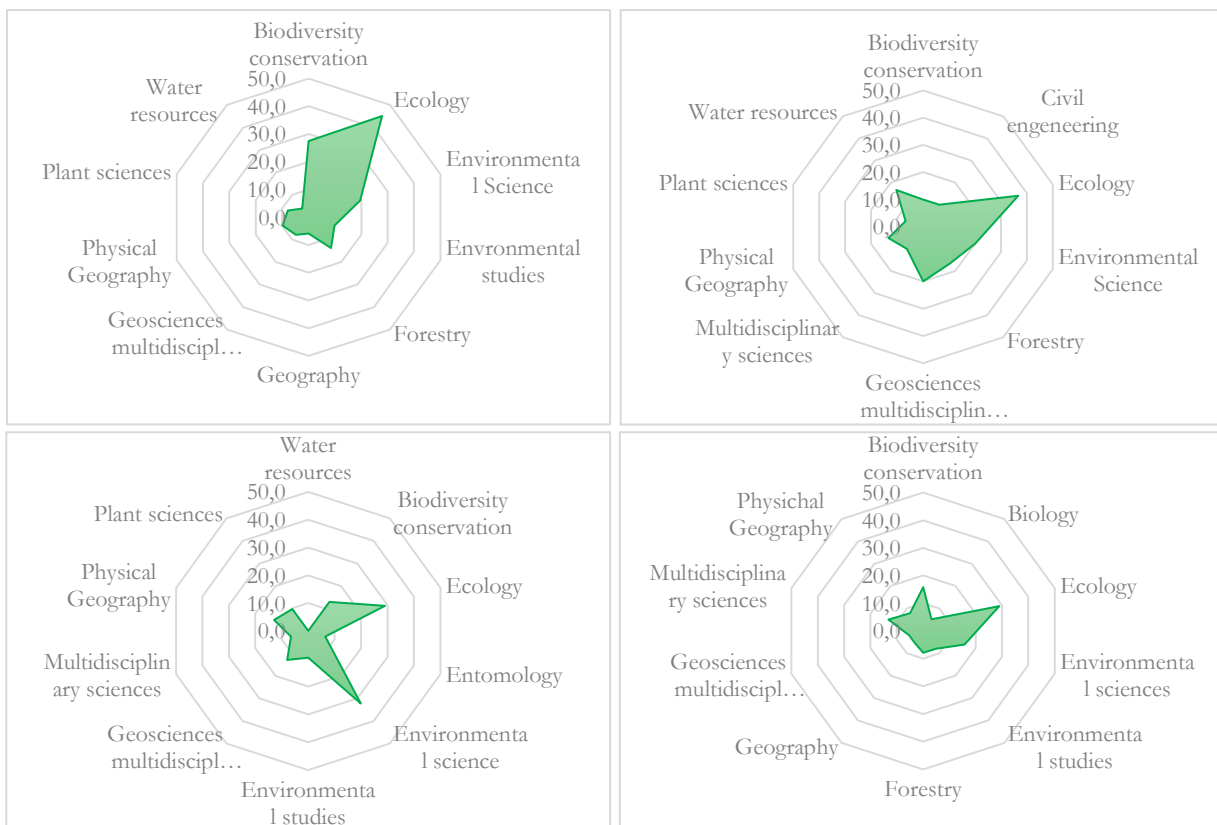


Figure III.2 Thematic composition of research across different mountain regions defined as WoS disciplinary categories

These data provide a helpful introduction to the relative dimensions of the dataset we are to work with. However, the deepening of the analysis could take many paths at this point, considering the body of data available for processing. The next sections display the main tools and research strategies adopted in this chapter with the task of understanding in greater detail the composition, scope, and geographical diffusion of the indexed data.

### 3 MAPPING CLIMATE CHANGE STUDIES IN ALPINE PROTECTED AREAS

The central focus of this chapter is the scientific dimension of the Alpine macroregion, in order to understand how climate change is gaining space among the research interests of different scientific and disciplinary domains. Clearly, many different qualitative and quantitative methodologies can be followed in order to accomplish this task. We have already employed techniques born in the fields of scientometrics and science mapping over the course of this work, with the task of visualizing and synthesizing data. Science mapping is a young undertaking and is still forming a strong core of reference literature able to guide the inquiry. In the case of the Alpine macroregion, we have not found

similar methodologies already applied to another case study, while in the case of conservation, we have met articles adopting the methodology a very few times (Kratzer, 2018). However, we believe that, given the exploratory dimension of this endeavour, we should be looking at more efficient ways to gather data that can serve as a basis for further, more in-depth analysis. Bibliometric analysis is today widely employed in the task of mapping the development of science for its ability to highlight hotspots and trends (Zhang et al., 2016). To employ it with the goal of shedding some light on the overall scientific literature produced in the Alps is an opportunity not to be missed.

We believe science mapping should be regarded as an ideal approach to fulfill the task of producing a reliable overview on the Alpine scale, but its reaching potential is bound to the level of data availability. In the case of research in PAs, the samples are often small in size, and hence we are testing the methodology at the limits of its effectiveness. This fact is to be taken into serious consideration when interpreting results and looking for significant trends.

Despite the epistemological limitations, we believe this methodology offers a series of key advantages in analysing the main features of bodies of literature if we accept some of the main assumptions it implies. Even if already discussed in the previous chapters, we schematize the central assumptions at the core of the methodology. First, scientific progress is expressed as a function of the accumulation of literature (Kratzer, 2018; p.37). Second, more central to our case, the co-occurrence of words represents a reliable index of the centrality of the specific terms employed in the literature. The terms that co-occur the most are the most likely to define particular branches of literature. Third, links and relative distance from one node to another are a direct function of their relatedness in the literature. These assumptions are just a fraction of the more complex set of rules that govern science-mapping undertakings, but are, in our view, the fundamental guidelines the reader should keep in mind when approaching the results and interpretations provided.

Additionally, it has to be remarked that metadata derived from the articles can be employed in the construction of different kinds of map: from network maps linking together terms or authors to maps binding together different geographical contexts, like PAs. In our study, both kinds of network map have been employed.

### 3.1 MAIN LIMITS OF THE METHODOLOGY AND THE RESEARCH STRATEGY

Even if the methodology applied to the research question displays evident advantages in a geography of science inquiry, its limitations need to be addressed, with a particular focus on the scope of the analysis. The analysis is indeed based on a fixed database – Thompson Reuters’ Web Of Science – that allows keeping track of the publications distributed to the scientific community by the main journals in the respective disciplinary fields. As a consequence, every research product published in journals outside the database is not detectable by the methodology. It is crucial to note that the exclusion of a research product from the database is not a direct result of the content and quality of the article itself, but is a function of the evaluation system that the database employs to steer the quality of the journal itself. In the light of this mechanism, it is possible that some research products might be undetectable. This fact can be connected with a wider issue of the exclusion from the reach of these scientometric tools, namely, the phenomenon of *grey literature*. The term can be defined as follows:

*Information produced on all levels of government, academia, business and industry in electronic and print formats not controlled by commercial publishing, i.e., where publishing is not the primary activity of the producing body”* (Bonato, 2016)

The case of PAs is effectively described by this definition, since their primary role is different from publishing. Moreover, the publishing activity itself might be conducted in a way that does not perfectly overlap the academic procedures, especially regarding the stage where the publication is presented. Journals may not be the most preferred target of research in PAs since the main goal of such research is often to generate useful and operationally practical information for the PA<sup>27</sup>. For this reason, part of the scientific literature produced by PAs, and in PAs, takes the form of reports or working papers.

To overcome the separation between the two bodies of literature is a very complex task since there are no universally recognized tools to mine the grey literature’s universe. Theoretically, a different database, namely Google Scholar, can potentially be used to track other sources of information, such as reports or conference papers. Even if it lacks the transparency and authoritative stature of the more widely used Thompson Reuters’ Web of Science or Elsevier’s Scopus, Google Scholar depends on a larger database, often comprising conference articles not detectable using other tools. Nevertheless, research has already shown that Google Scholar cannot be considered dependable, testing its detection

---

<sup>27</sup> The question of the means of research production in PAs is addressed in chapter 4, in the form of an expert interview that helped in identifying the issue.

ability on conference papers (Bonato, 2016; p. 254). Moreover, reports are still difficult to find if not published in any journal.

In order to overcome this situation, and work with the available data, the dataset has been analysed in two studies, from two different standpoints.

The first study, based completely on the Web of Science dataset, is focused on the analysis of the content of the scientific literature, looking for the main thematic features of the Alpine scientific corpus. The central aim is to recall the earlier ideas around which Livingstone constructed the entire architecture of his Geography of Science approach. First, that distinct regions holds distinctive “cultures”, and second, that some places can serve as recognizable and socially accepted “venues” of science. We tested these ideas in the field of research in PAs. This particular field of research can be seen as an odd benchmark since science can be regarded as “bound” to some key interests that are common to every PA. We highlighted how ecological research is dominant in the records, and the reason is self-evident. Science plays the role of the informer for policies and practices in these contexts (Scheurer, 2016), and hence its capacity of roaming free of external constraints is reduced since it needs to address present – and sometimes pressing – issues and possible future scenarios. In a more pragmatic view, science embraces an applied dimension, and, as the most evident example, the allocation of funding bound to particular objects of interest might shape research. However, our main interest is to understand which factors catalyse or prevent the formation of scientific interest around the topic of climate change in PAs, and such a task demands science to be treated in its relationship with external, interacting forces, and not the tracking of its “evolutive” directions *in vitro*, without any interference coming from the outside. Livingstone himself was concerned with “*how provincial science may be shaped by the forces of political and social geography*” (Livingstone, 2003; p. 106), and Mahoney and Hulme stressed the relationship between epistemic relevance and policy relevance in contemporary climate and climate-related studies. In the light of these helpful insights on the relationships between geography, society, and science, mapping scientific undertakings in Parks and PAs is an even more interesting challenge. Ecological research may take different directions in different settings. Glaciological research may be taken into higher consideration by some PAs rather than others. Research in forestry could be more appealing for PAs with higher or more valued wood-related resources, and so forth.

Once this framework for our task has been acknowledged, analysing science in this context can be particularly revealing: physical, environmental, and social geography can potentially exert a force in shaping the “scientific culture” of the region. Just to provide a more detailed example in the domain of ecological science, a particular research focus on different species, charismatic or not, might be revealing about the relationships between the species and the social community, and could define the

scale at which this relationship takes place. However, the fundamental questions are many at this point. What are the main thematic features of research in Alpine PAs? Can Livingstone’s theories stand against the connecting (and homologating?) effects of an infinitely more efficient science circulation? Can we talk and write about “scientific regions” in a context where the globalization of conservation policies are promoted by the IUCN and other influential boundary organizations? Note that all these questions can be answered only after addressing a more pragmatic and inescapable question. How do we operationalize concepts coming from a theoretical field of geography into something measurable? In the first study, we focus on looking for answers to these questions by testing a semantic analysis of the key features indexed in the metadata, namely keywords.

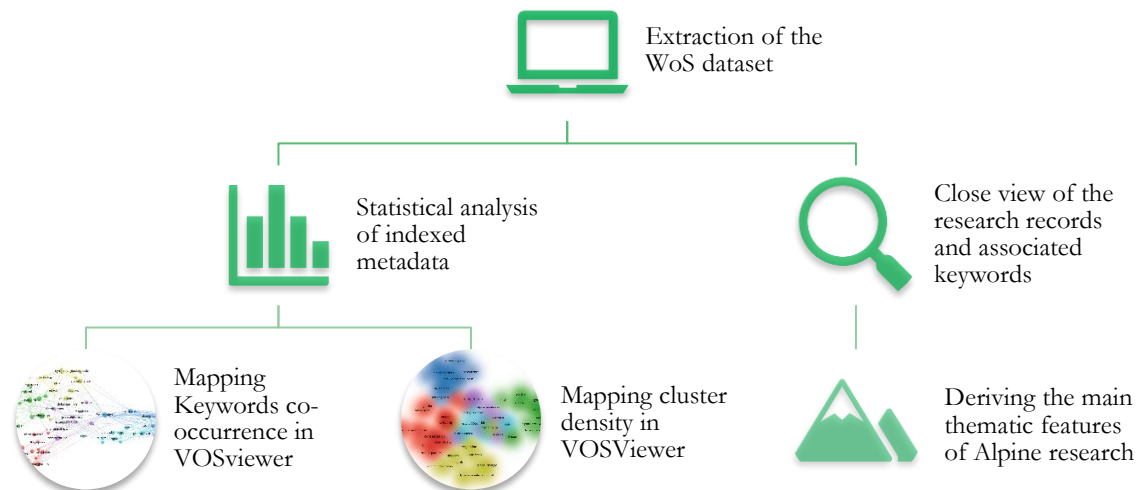


Figure III.3 Workflow of study 1

After dealing with the immaterial “culture” of the region, the second study will focus on the spatial distribution of research on climate change in Alpine PAs. The dataset employed in study one is, as already remarked, a limited one, that can represent just a part of the literature circulating on an Alpine scale. However, it can be nonetheless employed for analysing the spatial dimension embraced by research published in international journals, assuming that these publication contexts represent the top quality level as research products. Nevertheless, we are aware that this dataset might misrepresent the real composition of research in the Alps. In order to face the possibility that (1) some research projects may currently be under development, even without material traces of research products, and (2) some

publications can escape the reaching capacity of Web of Science, the focus shifted from a “distant reading” methodology to a close reading one. In the final session of the study, we look for active, or at least recent, research networks and projects in other databases or Park’s websites. Even if this integrative methodology cannot display the same systematicity of the first one employed, it can nevertheless be a source of reliable information regarding new research projects that still have to present published products or have already published outside the main online infrastructure of science circulation. In both cases, the data obtained have been organized in a small database and mapped.

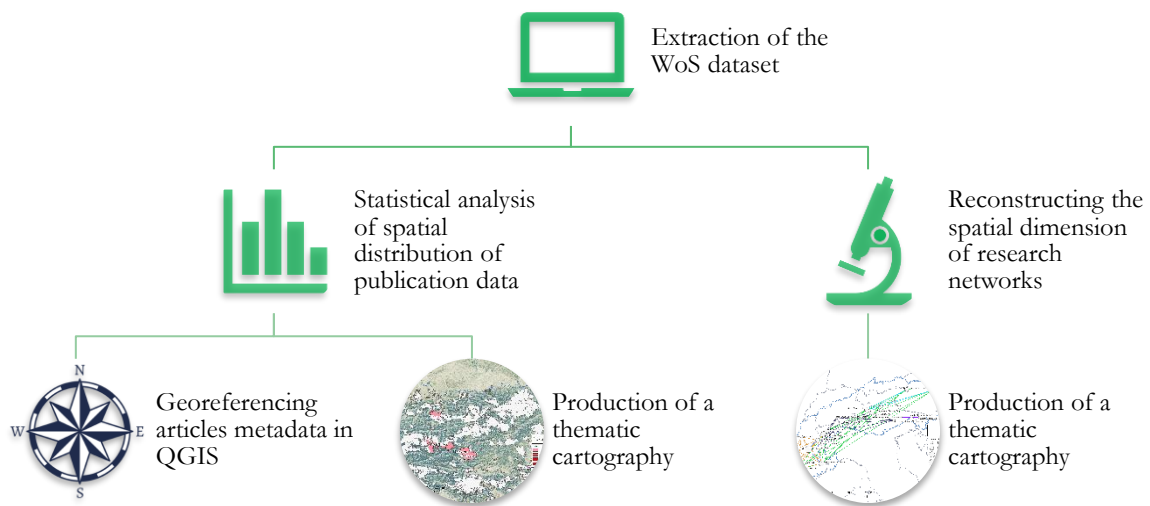


Figure III.4 Workflow of study 2

### 3.2 A SMALL DATASET AND THE TRIGLAV’S ANOMALY

The initial query applied to the Web of Science database<sup>28</sup> provided an initial dataset of 51 research records. An additional manual checking of the setting of every research was needed in order to exclude some misplaced records, as well as some records not directly concerning PAs. The final dataset is shown in table III.1.

<sup>28</sup> The queries were multiples. From a more generic “TS=(climate change AND alps AND protected areas)” to site specific queries TS=(climate change AND alps AND Swiss National Park”). The multiplicity of the queries allowed to detect more research records and integrate the initial one, that needed to be cleaned of a number of misplaced research records, most of them regarding Australian Alps.

Table III.1 The complete Web of Science dataset

<b>Authors</b>	<b>Title</b>	<b>Journal</b>
Fugazza, D; Scaioni, M; Corti, M; D'Agata, C; Azzoni, RS; Cernuschi, M; Smiraglia, C; Diolaiuti, GA	Combination of UAV and terrestrial photogrammetry to assess rapid glacier evolution and map glacier hazards	NATURAL HAZARDS AND EARTH SYSTEM SCIENCES
Azzoni, RS; Fugazza, D; Zerboni, A; Senese, A; D'Agata, C; Maragno, D; Carzaniga, A; Cernuschi, M; Diolaiuti, GA	Evaluating high-resolution remote sensing data for reconstructing the recent evolution of supra glacial debris: A study in the Central Alps (Stelvio Park, Italy)	PROGRESS IN PHYSICAL GEOGRAPHY
Schoville, SD; Dalongeville, A; Viennois, G; Gugerli, F; Taberlet, P; Lequette, B; Alvarez, N; Manel, S	Preserving genetic connectivity in the European Alps protected area network	BIOLOGICAL CONSERVATION
Azzoni, RS; Fugazza, D; Zennaro, M; Zucali, M; D'Agata, C; Maragno, D; Cernuschi, M; Smiraglia, C; Diolaiuti, GA	Recent structural evolution of Forni Glacier tongue (Ortles-Cevedale Group, Central Italian Alps)	JOURNAL OF MAPS
Carlson, BZ; Corona, MC; Dentant, CE; Bonet, R; Thuiller, W; Choler, P	Observed long-term greening of alpine vegetation-a case study in the French Alps	ENVIRONMENTAL RESEARCH LETTERS
Soncini, A; Bocchiola, D; Azzoni, RS; Diolaiuti, G	A methodology for monitoring and modeling of high altitude Alpine catchments	PROGRESS IN PHYSICAL GEOGRAPHY
Brambilla, M; Caprio, E; Assandri, G; Scridel, D; Bassi, E; Bionda, R; Celada, C; Falco, R; Bogliani, G; Pedrini, P; Rolando, A; Chamberlain, D	A spatially explicit definition of conservation priorities according to population resistance and resilience, species importance and level of threat in a changing climate	DIVERSITY AND DISTRIBUTIONS
von Fumetti, S; Blattner, L	Faunistic assemblages of natural springs in different areas in the Swiss National Park: a small-scale comparison	HYDROBIOLOGIA



Mason, THE; Brivio, F; Stephens, PA; Apollonio, M; Grignolio, S	The behavioral trade-off between thermoregulation and foraging in a heat-sensitive species	BEHAVIORAL ECOLOGY
Barros, C; Gueguen, M; Douzet, R; Carboni, M; Boulangeat, I; Zimmermann, NE; Munkemuller, T; Thuiller, W	Extreme climate events counteract the effects of climate and land-use changes in Alpine tree lines	JOURNAL OF APPLIED ECOLOGY
Urbini, S; Zirizzotti, A; Baskaradas, JA; Tabacco, IE; Cafarella, L; Senese, A; Smiraglia, C; Diolaiuti, G	Airborne Radio Echo Sounding (RES) measures on Alpine Glaciers to evaluate ice thickness and bedrock geometry: preliminary results from pilot tests performed in the Ortles-Cevedale Group (Italian Alps)	ANNALS OF GEOPHYSICS
Kerle, S; Tappeiner, U	The Tyrolean Alps LTSER platform - providing scientific insights for better management of protected areas	ECO MONT-JOURNAL ON PROTECTED MOUNTAIN AREAS RESEARCH
Novoa, C; Astruc, G; Desmet, JF; Besnard, A	No short-term effects of climate change on the breeding of Rock Ptarmigan in the French Alps and Pyrenees	JOURNAL OF ORNITHOLOGY
Fureder, L	Indicators of climate: Ecrins National Park participates in long-term monitoring to help determine the effects of climate change	ECO MONT-JOURNAL ON PROTECTED MOUNTAIN AREAS RESEARCH
Bonet, R; Arnaud, F; Bodin, X; Bouche, M; Boulangeat, I; Bourdeau, P; Bouvier, M; Cavalli, L; Choler, P; Delestrade, A; Dentant, C; Dumas, D; Fouinat, L; Gardent, M; Lavergne, S; Naffrechoux, E; Nellier, Y; Perga, ME; Sagot, C; Senn, O; Thuiller, W	Indicators of climate: Ecrins National Park participates in long-term monitoring to help determine the effects of climate change	ECO MONT-JOURNAL ON PROTECTED MOUNTAIN AREAS RESEARCH

Kudernatsch, T; Huber, D; Sutcliffe, L; Walentowski, H; Kirchner, M; Fegg, W; Franz, H	Vegetation changes of alpine calcareous grasslands in the Berchtesgaden National Park (SE-Germany) during the last three decades	TUEXENIA
Robson, BA; Holbling, D; Nuth, C; Strozzi, T; Dahl, SO	Decadal Scale Changes in Glacier Area in the Hohe Tauern National Park (Austria) Determined by Object-Based Image Analysis	REMOTE SENSING
Bleu, J; Herfindal, I; Loison, A; Kwak, AMG; Garel, M; Toigo, C; Rempfler, T; Filli, F; Saether, BE	Age-specific survival and annual variation in survival of female chamois differ between populations	OECOLOGIA
Brambilla, M; Bergero, V; Bassi, E; Falco, R	Current and future effectiveness of Natura 2000 network in the central Alps for the conservation of mountain forest owl species in a warming climate	EUROPEAN JOURNAL OF WILDLIFE RESEARCH
Fugazza, D; Senese, A; Azzoni, RS; Smiraglia, C; Cernuschi, M; Severi, D; Diolaiuti, GA	HIGH-RESOLUTION MAPPING OF GLACIER SURFACE FEATURES. THE UAV SURVEY OF THE FORNI GLACIER (STELVIO NATIONAL PARK, ITALY)	GEOGRAFIA FISICA E DINAMICA QUATERNARIA
Boulangeat, I; Georges, D; Dentant, C; Bonet, R; Van Es, J; Abdulkhak, S; Zimmermann, NE; Thuiller, W	Anticipating the spatio-temporal response of plant diversity and vegetation structure to climate and land use change in a protected area	ECOGRAPHY
Salerno, F; Gambelli, S; Viviano, G; Thakuri, S; Guyennon, N; D'Agata, C; Diolaiuti, G; Smiraglia, C; Stefani, F; Bocchiola, D; Tartari, G	High alpine ponds shift upwards as average temperatures increase: A case study of the Ortles-Cevedale mountain group (Southern Alps, Italy) over the last 50 years	GLOBAL AND PLANETARY CHANGE
Dobremez, L; Nettier, B; Legard, JP; Caraguel, B; Garde, L; Vieux, S; Lavorel, S;	Sentinel Alpine Pastures: An original programme for a new form of shared	REVUE DE GEOGRAPHIE

Della-Vedova, M	governance to face the climate challenge	E ALPINE- JOURNAL OF ALPINE RESEARCH
Leys, B; Carcaillet, C; Blarquez, O; Lami, A; Musazzi, S; Trevisan, R	Resistance of mixed subalpine forest to fire frequency changes: the ecological function of dwarf pine ( <i>Pinus mugo</i> ssp <i>mugo</i> )	QUATERNAR Y SCIENCE REVIEWS
D'Agata, C; Bocchiola, D; Maragno, D; Smiraglia, C; Diolaiuti, GA	Glacier shrinkage driven by climate change during half a century (1954-2007) in the Ortles-Cevedale group (Stelvio National Park, Lombardy, Italian Alps)	THEORETICA L AND APPLIED CLIMATOLO GY
Fischer, A; Stocker-Waldhuber, M; Seiser, B; Hynek, B; Slupetzky, H	Glaciological monitoring in Hohe Tauern National Park	ECO MONT- JOURNAL ON PROTECTED MOUNTAIN AREAS RESEARCH
Baur, B; Baur, A	Snails keep the pace: shift in upper elevation limit on mountain slopes as a response to climate warming	CANADIAN JOURNAL OF ZOOLOGY- REVUE CANADIENN E DE ZOOLOGIE
Marke, T; Strasser, U; Kraller, G; Warscher, M; Kunstmann, H; Franz, H; Vogel, M	The Berchtesgaden National Park (Bavaria, Germany): a platform for interdisciplinary catchment research	ENVIRONME NTAL EARTH SCIENCES
Garavaglia, V; Diolaiuti, G; Smiraglia, C; Pasquale, V; Pelfini, M	Evaluating Tourist Perception of Environmental Changes as a Contribution to Managing Natural Resources in Glacierized Areas: A Case Study of the Forni Glacier	ENVIRONME NTAL MANAGEME NT

	(Stelvio National Park, Italian Alps)	
Boulangéat, I; Philippe, P; Abdulhak, S; Douzet, R; Garraud, L; Lavergne, S; Lavorel, S; van Es, J; Vittoz, P; Thuiller, W	Improving plant functional groups for dynamic models of biodiversity: at the crossroads between functional and community ecology	GLOBAL CHANGE BIOLOGY
Mignatti, A; Casagrandi, R; Provenzale, A; von Hardenberg, A; Gatto, M	Sex- and age-structured models for Alpine ibex <i>Capra ibex ibex</i> population dynamics	WILDLIFE BIOLOGY
Cantonati, M; Angeli, N; Bertuzzi, E; Spitale, D; Lange-Bertalot, H	Diatoms in springs of the Alps: spring types, environmental determinants, and substratum	FRESHWATER SCIENCE
Nascimbene, J; Thor, G; Nimis, PL	Habitat types and lichen conservation in the Alps: Perspectives from a case study in the Stelvio National Park (Italy)	PLANT BIOSYSTEMS
Gurrutxaga, M; Rubio, L; Saura, S	Key connectors in protected forest area networks and the impact of highways: A transnational case study from the Cantabrian Range to the Western Alps (SW Europe)	LANDSCAPE AND URBAN PLANNING
Tattoni, C; Ciolli, M; Ferretti, F	The Fate of Priority Areas for Conservation in Protected Areas: A Fine-Scale Markov Chain Approach	ENVIRONMENTAL MANAGEMENT
Cantonati, M; Lange-Bertalot, H	Diatom monitors of close-to-pristine, very-low alkalinity habitats: three new <i>Eunotia</i> species from springs in Nature Parks of the southeastern Alps	JOURNAL OF LIMNOLOGY
Kutnar, L; Matijasic, D; Pisek, R	CONSERVATION STATUS AND POTENTIAL THREATS TO NATURA 2000 FOREST HABITATS IN SLOVENIA	SUMARSKI LIST
Bocchiola, D; GropPELLI, B	Spatial estimation of snow water	COLD

	equivalent at different dates within the Adamello Park of Italy	REGIONS SCIENCE AND TECHNOLOG Y
Diolaiuti, G; Smiraglia, C	Changing glaciers in a changing climate: how vanishing geomorphosites have been driving deep changes in mountain landscapes and environments	GEOMORPH OLOGIE- RELIEF PROCESSUS ENVIRONNE MENT
Robinson, CT; Oertli, B	Long-term Biomonitoring of Alpine Waters in the Swiss National Park	ECO MONT- JOURNAL ON PROTECTED MOUNTAIN AREAS RESEARCH
Sztatecsny, M; Hodl, W	Can protected mountain areas serve as refuges for declining amphibians? Potential threats of climate change and amphibian chytridiomycosis in an alpine amphibian population	ECO MONT- JOURNAL ON PROTECTED MOUNTAIN AREAS RESEARCH
Zohmann, M; Woss, M	Spring density and summer habitat use of alpine rock ptarmigan <i>Lagopus muta helvetica</i> in the southeastern Alps	EUROPEAN JOURNAL OF WILDLIFE RESEARCH
Oertli, B; Indermuehle, N; Angelibert, S; Hinden, H; Stoll, A	Macroinvertebrate assemblages in 25 high alpine ponds of the Swiss National Park (Cirque of Macun) and relation to environmental variables	HYDROBIOL OGIA
Lima, M; Berryman, A	Predicting nonlinear and non-additive effects of climate: the Alpine ibex revisited	CLIMATE RESEARCH

Jacobson, AR; Provenzale, A; Von Hardenberg, A; Bassano, B; Festa-Bianchet, M	Climate forcing and density dependence in a mountain ungulate population	ECOLOGY
Mignatti, A; Casagrandi, R; Provenzale, A; von Hardenberg, A; Gatto, M	Sex- and age-structured models for Alpine ibex <i>Capra ibex ibex</i> population dynamics	WILDLIFE BIOLOGY
Pettorelli, N; Pelletier, F; von Hardenberg, A; Festa-Bianchet, M; Cote, SD	Early onset of vegetation growth vs. rapid green-up: Impacts on juvenile mountain ungulates	ECOLOGY

Even with this multistep approach, an anomaly has been detected. Considering the Triglav National Park in Slovenia, no research records dealing with climate change have been found. However, further interrogation of the dataset was able to find three glaciological research records conducted in the Triglav glacier. These records are not indexed as research conducted in the PA since they never cite directly the National Park, but just the glacier's toponym. This fact opens up the possibility that a similar situation might be repeated in other PAs. When read in this light, the particular case of the Stelvio National Park, which will be addressed later, is probably the real anomaly, where the research – funded directly either by the park management or the Region of Lombardy – actively cites the park among the metadata<sup>29</sup>. Wherever this official economic – or another form of institutional – relationship is not present, the Triglav's anomaly might reproduce itself, and studies carried on within the PA will not be indexed as such. The anomaly reveals the fact that PAs might represent the wrong reference scale in these cases. Regarding the Triglav toponym, it refers simultaneously to a mountain, a glacier, and a PA. It is clear that from a strictly scientific standpoint, glaciological records have to be stored and labeled in databases with the name of the glacier, or the toponym of the mountain. At the same time, without active interaction between the researchers and the park's managers, there is no point in considering the PAs while indexing the research record. Hence, research projects will not automatically recognize the PA as a stakeholder, without explicit expressions of interest by the PA, which might commit to the research project, as in the case of Stevio. The anomaly is, in Triglav's example, linked to glaciology and glaciers, but could be virtually extended to other disciplines that focus on other objects of interest. However, it is to be noted that ecological research, at least within the limits of our dataset, often addresses spatial distribution issues in order to test the capacity of PAs and non-PAs to retain

<sup>29</sup> The source for this data is Web of Science itself, since among the metadata are often indexed funding agencies.

specific populations, or to analyse the impacts of climate change on a prized protected species, and that research in conservation biology and related fields are more naturally linked to the main tasks and interests of PAs. The Triglav anomaly, in light of this consideration, can have an impact on the indexing of glaciological rather than biological or ecological research.

What are the implications of this misplaced literature for the aim of the study? Should we include it in the original one or filter the new data out of the final mapping outputs? Even although this decision potentially reduces the volume of the dataset, we have decided to keep these research records out of the further processing, in order to maintain the integrity of the relationship between research and PAs. Research conducted in the PA should be made with the explicit reference of the PA's tasks and scopes. If research "just happens" to be carried on within the boundary of a PA, but does not address this spatial entity directly (in the title, keywords, abstracts or any other metadata field), it could still be considered as meaningful data for every PAs' administration. However, in a research study aiming at a quantitative and qualitative analysis of the relationship between science and PAs, only science conducted in partnership – or at least with a reciprocal interest – should, in our view, be considered. The reader should acknowledge at this point that the dataset considered in this work is a direct consequence of this choice.

## 4 STUDY 1: PROVINCIAL SCIENCE, COSMOPOLITAN SCIENCE. A THEMATIC ANALYSIS OF THE DATASET

### 4.1 METHODOLOGY

The main task of this study is to define what constitutes research in Alpine PAs from a thematic standpoint. As anticipated in the previous section, the initial idea that we wanted to address with the study deals with some of the main ideas that structure David Livingstone's work, i.e. the concept of "scientific cultures" linked to particular geographical areas. In Livingstone's own words, what constitutes the geography of science are "*ideas and institutions, theories and practice, principles and performances*" (Livingstone 2003, p. 12). However, these concepts can be difficult to translate on an operative level. The collection of metadata associated with scientific articles in the WoS database can serve as a viable starting point. Among the metadata stored qualitative data can be particularly helpful in identifying the main features that shape research in a region, especially in the case of the co-occurrence of particular terms. However, approaching this kind of analysis one has to be mindful of the fact that our questions can seldom be answered directly. Even although we entered this study with a set of theoretical

questions in mind, the research turns, when dealing with relatively large (numerically and geographically) bodies of data, into a data-driven one, where new questions can arise from the analysis of the dataset and old questions might remain unsolved. In this case, we looked for descriptors of different features of research, namely the clusterization of different research topics, the temporal dimension of research development, and the topology of the network. Hence, the methodology adopted can be tested here in its information-mining capacity, and then the results confronted with the initial theoretical questions.

With this goal, the Web of Science database has been mined, and the dataset extracted. For the first study, our interest focuses on defining the thematic composition of research. The WoS disciplinary composition category, used in the introductory section, is too rough as a proxy to map effectively the main features of research. The fact that the discipline of ecology appears as the main discipline in the study of climate change in this area is not particularly meaningful. In order to overcome the limitations of the potential reach of our instruments of analysis, we employed the software VOSviewer, which allows us to visualize via social network the co-occurrence of terms extracted from the articles' metadata: titles, abstracts, and keywords.

As a starting point for describing research carried on in Alpine PAs, an analysis of the keywords co-occurrence has been performed in the VOSviewer environment. Keywords can be seen as the most synthetic index of the contents of research, since they do not need a manual clean-up of the data, unlike the more generic terms derived from abstracts and titles (Yeung et al., 2018).

The literature corpus was processed via VOSviewer and divided into different clusters. The keywords selected were filtered: in order to be taken into consideration, keywords must have occurred at least twice. Consequently, the analysis considered 77 keywords.

## 4.2 RESULTS

The results of the analysis are synthetized visually by figures III.5, III.6, and III.7, while table III.2 deepen the analysis on some of the main metrics of the network.



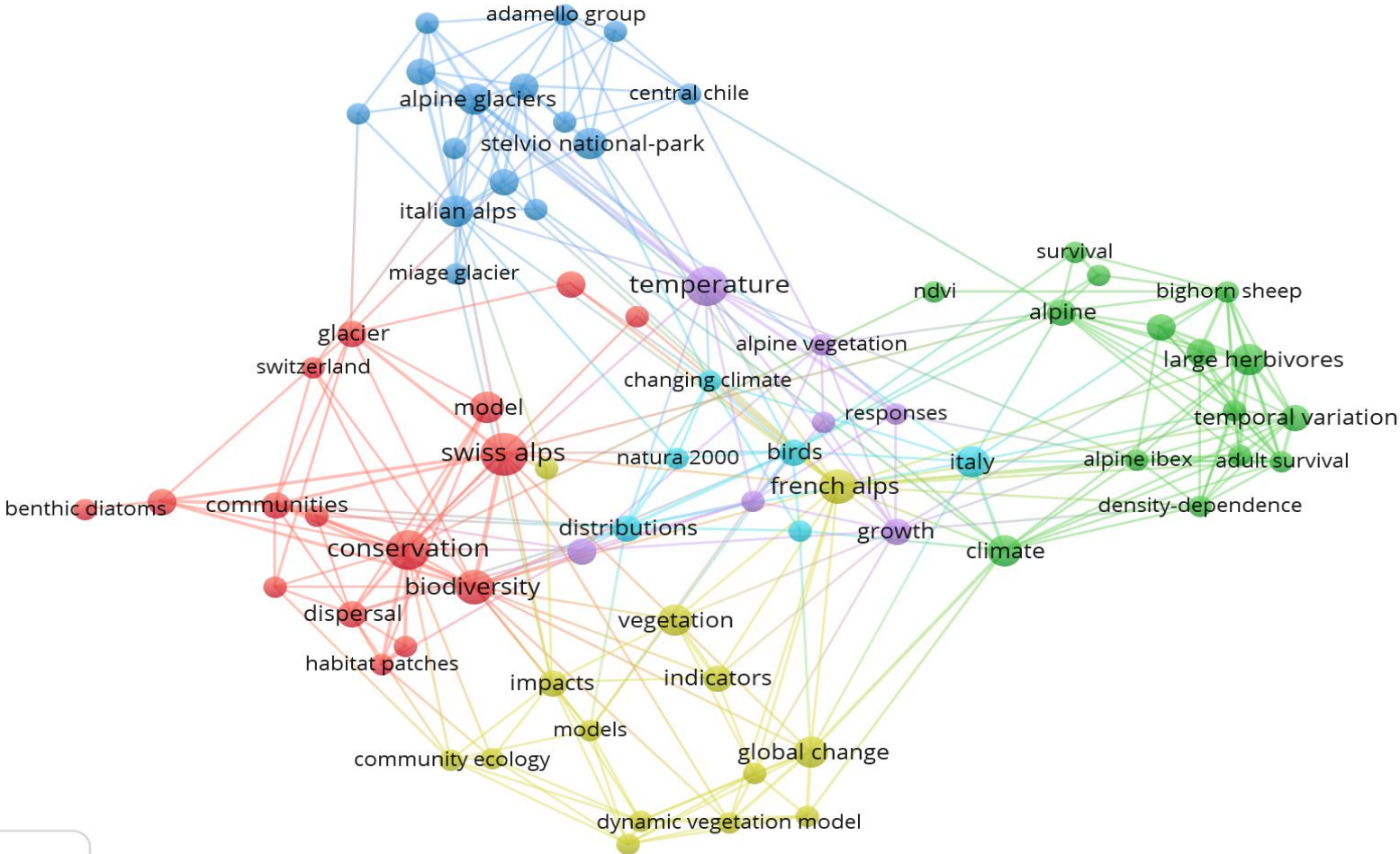


Figure III.5 Co-word map of the keywords

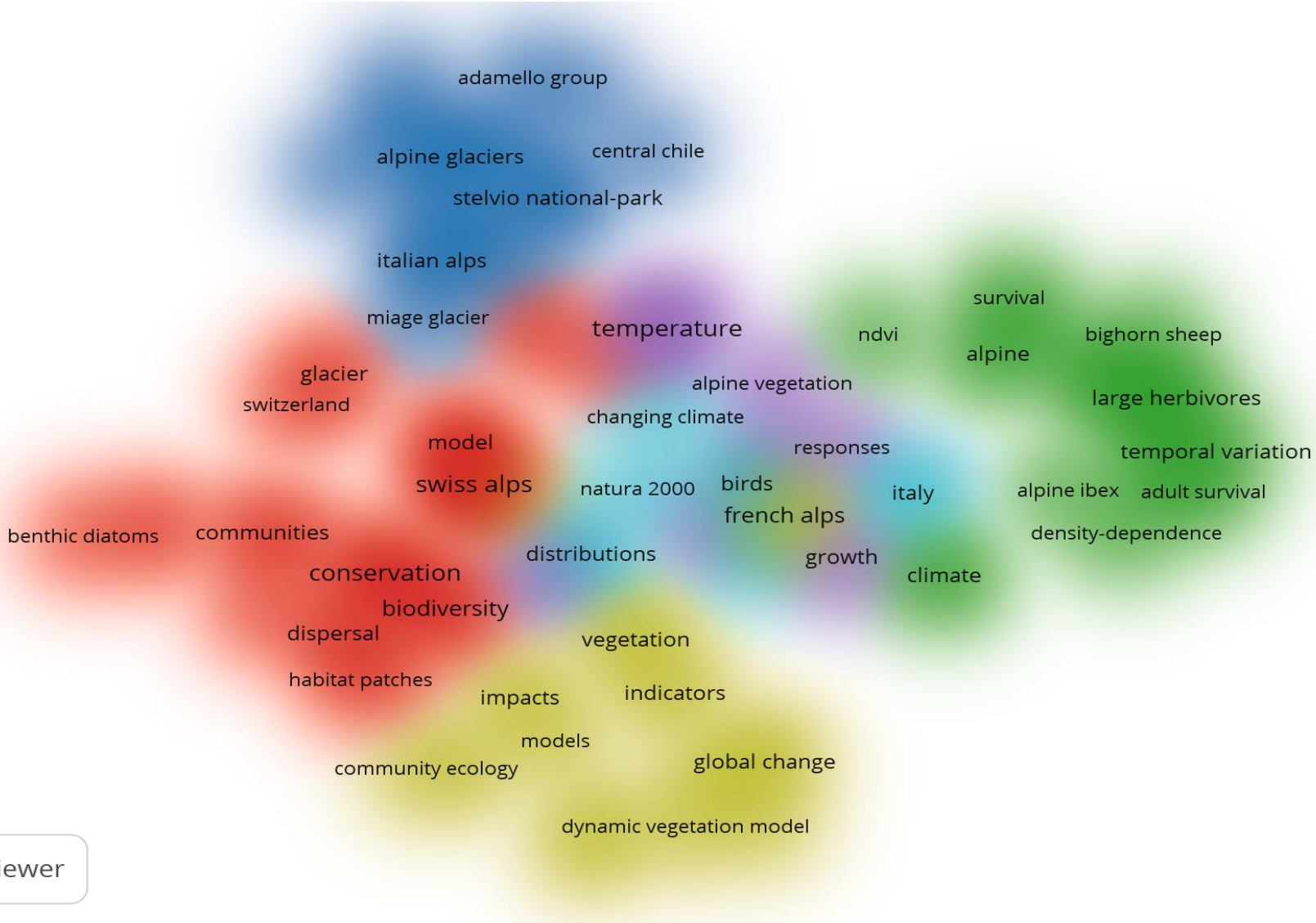


Figure III.6 Density Map of the different clusters

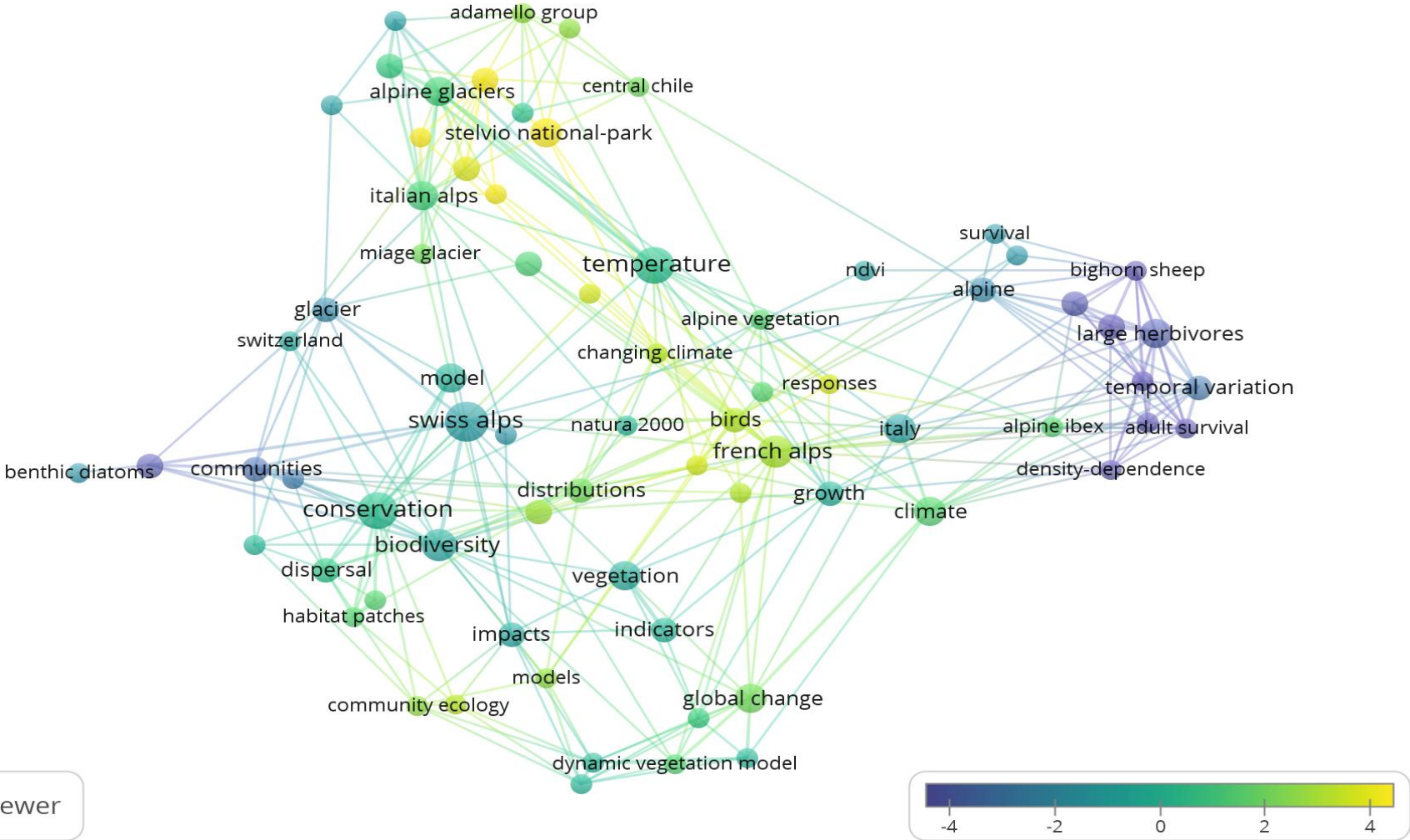


Figure III.7 Overlay visualization of the network highlighting the average publication year of every keyword. The results are normalized by subtracting the mean value of the dataset to every term's publication year

Table III.3 Items (keywords) and associated metrics. Analysis performed on the basis of VOSviewer map file

id	label	X	y	cluster	Links	Total link strength	Occurrences	Avg. pub. year	Avg. Pub. Year normalized	Avg. citations	Avg. norm. citations>
52	benthic diatoms	-12488	-1827	1	1	1	2	2011,50	-1,66	19	9927
55	biodiversity	-4438	-36	1	18	22	5	2012,40	-0,76	138	12558
100	communities	-8577	-1724	1	11	15	3	2010,00	-3,16	21	11789
107	conservation	-5841	-2759	1	17	21	6	2013,33	0,17	198333	12257
120	dispersal	-6972	-4215	1	10	11	3	2013,67	0,51	233333	16021
197	glacier	-6979	2144	1	9	10	3	2011,00	-2,16	133333	11474
219	habitat patches	-6359	-5352	1	6	8	2	2014,50	1,34	295	12165
267	landsat	-1062	253	1	6	6	2	2016,50	3,34	25	16591
270	landscape connectivity	-5861	-4953	1	6	8	2	2014,50	1,34	295	12165
292	mass-balance	-2468	3287	1	9	9	3	2014,33	1,17	8	14924
299	model	-4179	464	1	10	11	4	2012,75	-0,41	2325	13687
341	patterns	-7699	-1996	1	9	10	2	2010,50	-2,66	28	11851
433	streams	-1093	-166	1	9	12	3	2009,33	-3,83	22	10708

442	swiss alps	-3852	-562	1	24	30	7	2011,86	-1,30	157143	10495
444	switzerland	-7775	1387	1	9	9	2	2012,50	-0,66	265	16348
465	trichoptera	-8549	-3613	1	8	8	2	2013,00	-0,16	55	14015
7	adult survival	12234	-761	2	13	16	2	2008,00	-5,16	535	7247
15	alpine	7664	2634	2	15	15	3	2011,00	-2,16	38	8596
20	alpine ibex	9248	-727	2	10	10	2	2014,50	1,34	4	2247
54	bighorn sheep	11138	3101	2	12	15	2	2005,50	-7,66	116	1
86	climate	652	-2783	2	13	15	4	2014,50	1,34	6	6318
117	density-dependence	10548	-1769	2	10	10	2	2009,00	-4,16	165	7247
240	ibex	11257	416	2	11	12	2	2005,00	-8,16	62	1
272	large herbivores	11577	1567	2	16	23	4	2009,50	-3,66	60	6124
324	ndvi	5048	3081	2	9	9	2	2012,00	-1,16	675	9091
354	plant phenology	9737	2304	2	15	18	3	2009,33	-3,83	773333	6667
362	population dynamics	1057	1728	2	14	18	3	2005,67	-7,49	856667	1
384	reproductive success	847	3477	2	9	10	2	2011,50	-1,66	665	5
440	survival	798	3984	2	9	10	2	2011,50	-1,66	665	5
449	temporal variation	12507	243	2	13	17	3	2010,33	-2,83	356667	4831
455	time series	11393	-609	2	13	16	2	2008,00	-5,16	535	7247

6	adamello group	-2582	937	3	9	9	2	2015,50	2,34	10	11706
18	alpine glaciers	-4452	7481	3	13	19	4	2014,25	1,09	1575	19887
78	central chile	-5	76	3	7	7	2	2015,00	1,84	8	994
114	debris layer	-5398	9204	3	6	9	2	2012,00	-1,16	245	15911
183	forni glacier	-3451	7774	3	13	15	3	2017,33	4,17	2	16818
202	glaciers	-1507	9	3	5	5	2	2015,50	2,34	5	2045
253	italian alps	-4815	4924	3	16	19	4	2014,25	1,09	135	12996
298	miage glacier	-4826	352	3	10	10	2	2015,00	1,84	4	16966
305	mont-blanc massif	-5558	8117	3	11	16	3	2014,00	0,84	166667	20607
336	ortes- cevedale group	-4852	6338	3	9	10	2	2018,00	4,84	5	15
382	remote sensing	-3829	5586	3	11	13	3	2016,67	3,51	6	21364
412	snow water equivalent	-2584	6956	3	9	9	2	2013,50	0,34	95	5795
431	stelvio national- park	-2032	6443	3	12	13	4	2017,25	4,09	2	8182
437	supraglacial debris	-3164	4982	3	10	10	2	2017,00	3,84	2	275
474	variability	-6846	7122	3	6	6	2	2012,00	-1,16	225	13877

101	community ecology	-4945	-7544	4	8	8	2	2015,50	2,34	125	1886
127	diversity	1363	-7836	4	9	9	2	2014,00	0,84	20	22893
132	dynamic vegetation model	835	-8955	4	8	9	2	2014,50	1,34	215	22666
140	ecosystem processes	-1014	-89	4	9	10	2	2013,00	-0,16	29	21071
186	french alps	3091	-1313	4	21	21	5	2015,80	2,64	4	15808
190	functional diversity	-1273	-9432	4	9	10	2	2013,00	-0,16	29	21071
207	global change	2507	-735	4	11	14	4	2015,00	1,84	115	12096
244	impacts	-2852	-576	4	11	11	3	2012,33	-0,83	11	9117
245	indicators	553	-5668	4	6	8	3	2013,00	-0,16	56667	10706
265	land-use change	2435	-8822	4	7	8	2	2013,00	-0,16	20	11919
269	landscape	-2955	-904	4	6	7	2	2011,50	-1,66	15	6709
302	models	-2054	-6841	4	9	9	2	2015,50	2,34	115	14769
311	mountain plants	-4058	-7502	4	9	9	2	2016,00	2,84	105	10678
475	vegetation	-296	-4334	4	10	12	4	2012,50	-0,66	10	10401
29	alpine vegetation	2751	1884	5	8	8	2	2014,50	1,34	75	7895
208	global warming	1306	-1658	5	10	10	2	2016,50	3,34	1	4091

215	growth	4292	-2348	5	13	13	3	2012,67	-0,49	93333	11667
388	responses	4279	321	5	8	9	2	2016,50	3,34	0	0
424	species composition	2778	143	5	6	6	2	2014,50	1,34	1	1053
426	species richness	-2241	-277	5	14	14	3	2015,67	2,51	23333	2456
448	temperature	337	3241	5	21	25	6	2013,50	0,34	105	8738
59	birds	2148	-551	6	13	14	3	2016,00	2,84	36667	6818
80	changing climate	432	1056	6	8	8	2	2016,00	2,84	6	12273
124	distributions	-1289	-2274	6	13	14	3	2015,00	1,84	6	9274
254	italy	586	-746	6	20	21	4	2012,00	-1,16	31	10763
319	natura 2000	-244	-669	6	10	10	2	2013,00	-0,16	16	10879
370	protected areas	2294	-2322	6	8	8	2	2016,00	2,84	45	6136



The keyword map in figure 3.4 highlights five clusters of research, with a core structure composed of three clusters, and two additional clusters lying on the periphery of the network. The semantic analysis of the keywords allows reconstructing the cluster to the main thematic core around which it revolves. Cluster 1, coloured in red, deals with the conservation of biological communities, with a particular interest for terms arising from freshwater ecology, benthic diatoms and *trichoptera*. Cluster 2, highlighted in green, is dealing with the particular case of ibex population dynamics and, more generally, large herbivores' populations and habitats. Even if not part of the keywords, the setting of these research studies is detectable via metadata close reading: all these keywords, in fact, refer to articles produced by research carried out in Gran Paradiso National Park. Cluster 3, coloured in blue, revolves around glaciology. The cluster is the only one highlighting toponyms among the keywords, since Mont Blanc massif, Miage glacier, Forni glacier, and Adamello group are all constituent parts of the cluster. Of particular interest is the explicit reference to the Stelvio National Park as one of the most recurrent terms of the entire group of items ( $n=4$ ). Clusters 4 and 5, coloured in yellow and light blue respectively, deal with ecological topics such as alpine vegetation responses to climate change, as well as models for describing and forecasting changes. Finally, cluster six, marked in purple, focuses on a precise spatial scale, i.e. Natura 2000 network, and some of the main conservationist issues related to the network, as in the case of birds' conservation. From the point of view of the dominance of a particular set of keywords in the network, it should be noted that the network lacks recognizable centres (i.e. keywords with noticeably higher occurrences). The median value of the entire dataset in terms of occurrences of a single term equals 2, and coincides also with the lowest value. Conversely, the highest value is 7. Hence, the range of variability is restricted and no clear centre of the map appears.

From the point of view of centrality measures, degree centrality (labeled as “links” in the table) does not show significant evidence, since the terms belonging to the 90th percentile (Avg. Dc=15.8) are either very broad terms (e.g. biodiversity, conservation, temperature) or general toponym (e.g. Italian Alps, French Alps). An exception to the rule is given by the keyword “large herbivores” that constitutes a centre for cluster 1, a factor that will be further developed in the discussion of the results.

Considering the temporal dimension, the dataset is relatively recent: the minimum value is 2005, while the average year of publication rests on 2013.16. Research on the topic is active today since the latest publication year is 2018. A closer look at the different “age” of the clusters reveals that cluster 2, the “Gran Paradiso cluster” is the oldest one, followed by some of the keywords of cluster 1. However, the contemporary research front is not part of any specific cluster, since the newest keywords are distributed between cluster 3 and 5. Interestingly, Stelvio National Park is one of the keywords displaying the highest average publication year, highlighting how the setting of research is productive in

this particular moment. If read in contraposition to the other geographically distinguishable, and most peripheral cluster of Gran Paradiso, this visualization helps us understand how the two hot-spots are temporally not aligned one to the other, since cluster 2 represented the first body of literature addressing the problem of climate change, while cluster 3 is temporally the last. Looking at figure 3.6, it can be seen how the core of the network (clusters 4, 5, and 6) are all recent, with deviation from the mean values ranging from 0 to 4.84 for every keyword. The deviations from the mean are displayed in figure III.8.

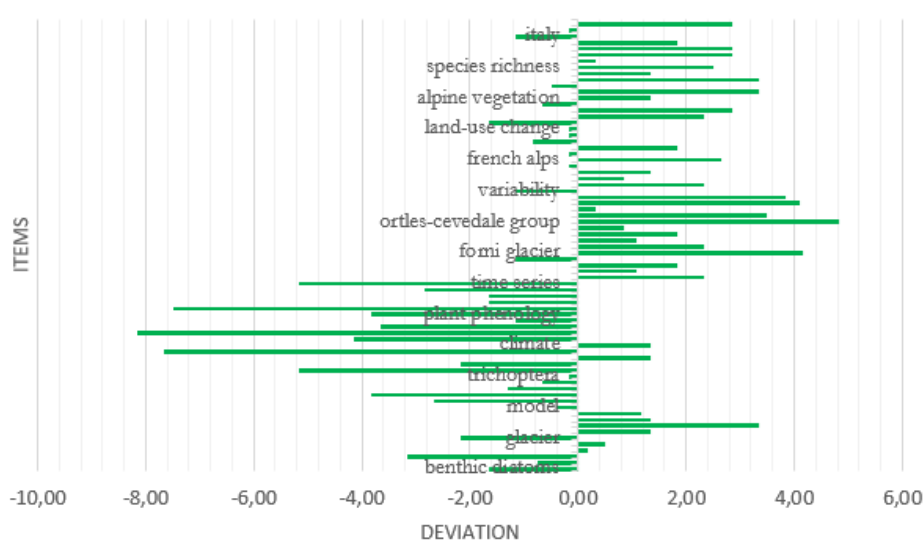


Figure III.8 Deviation from the mean of average publication year

At the beginning of the analysis, we defined two clusters as more “peripheral”, but did not further develop the claim. More peripheral edges in a network can be detected from a centrality standpoint (degree centrality) or from a topological standpoint, by considering the geometrical shape of the whole network and its spatial properties. Hence, the network has been further analysed from a topological standpoint, looking for meaningful spatial relationships. More precisely, we addressed the question of the centre–periphery relationship, since from preliminary observations, the maps highlighted an accumulation of “specialist terms” on their outer edges. Our interpretation of the adjective “specialist”, however, is not based on the disciplinary context in which the terms are usually employed. The semantic domain might reveal a slippery ground in defining the degree of specialism of a term. Consequently, we defined a keyword as “specialist” if it addresses a topic that holds a central dimension in one research record, or in just a few research records. In other words, a term can be seen

as specialist if it is not shared among several research records. We considered the hypothesis of a strong centre–periphery relationship, where most common terms are concentrated in the centre of the map, while the more specialist terms gather in the peripheries. In order to test this hypothesis, we calculated the distance of every single node from the centre of the network, coincident with the origin of the Cartesian axes. Starting from the single values of  $x$  and  $y$  reported in table III.1, we derived the Euclidean distance of the point from the centre ( $R$ ). The results are shown in table III.4 and synthesized in figure III.9.

Table III.4 Euclidean distance ( $R$ ) of every edges from the center of the network ( $x,y=0,0$ ) and quartile.

<b>label</b>	<b>x</b>	<b>y</b>	<b>R</b>
change	-5	76	76,2
natura 2000	-244	-669	712,1
italy	586	-746	948,6
ecosystem processes	-1014	-89	1017,9
landsat	-1062	253	1091,7
streams	-1093	-166	1105,5
changing climate	432	1056	1140,9
glaciers	-1507	9	1507,0
population dynamics	1057	1728	2025,6
global warming	1306	-1658	2110,6
birds	2148	-551	2217,5
species richness	-2241	-277	2258,1
global change	2507	-735	2612,5
distributions	-1289	-2274	2613,9
adamello group	-2582	937	2746,8
species composition	2778	143	2781,7
climate	652	-2783	2858,4
impacts	-2852	-576	2909,6
landscape	-2955	-904	3090,2
temperature	337	3241	3258,5
protected areas	2294	-2322	3264,1
alpine vegetation	2751	1884	3334,3
french alps	3091	-1313	3358,3
reproductive success	847	3477	3578,7
swiss alps	-3852	-562	3892,8
survival	798	3984	4063,1
mass-balance	-2468	3287	4110,4
model	-4179	464	4204,7
responses	4279	321	4291,0
vegetation	-296	-4334	4344,1
biodiversity	-4438	-36	4438,1
miage glacier	-4826	352	4838,8
growth	4292	-2348	4892,3
indicators	553	-5668	5694,9
supraglacial debris	-3164	4982	5901,8
ndvi	5048	3081	5914,0
conservation	-5841	-2759	6459,8
stelvio national-park	-2032	6443	6755,8
remote sensing	-3829	5586	6772,3

italian alps	-4815	4924	6886,9
models	-2054	-6841	7142,7
glacier	-6979	2144	7300,9
snow water equivalent	-2584	6956	7420,4
landscape connectivity	-5861	-4953	7673,6
switzerland	-7775	1387	7897,7
patterns	-7699	-1996	7953,5
diversity	1363	-7836	7953,7
ortles-cevedale group	-4852	6338	7982,0
alpine	7664	2634	8104,0
dispersal	-6972	-4215	8147,1
habitat patches	-6359	-5352	8311,5
forni glacier	-3451	7774	8505,6
mountain plants	-4058	-7502	8529,2
alpine glaciers	-4452	7481	8705,5
communities	-8577	-1724	8748,5
dynamic vegetation model	835	-8955	8993,8
community ecology	-4945	-7544	9020,3
land-use change	2435	-8822	9151,9
alpine ibex	9248	-727	9276,5
trichoptera	-8549	-3613	9281,1
functional diversity	-1273	-9432	9517,5
mont-blanc massif	-5558	8117	9837,5
variability	-6846	7122	9878,8
plant phenology	9737	2304	10005,9
debris layer	-5398	9204	10670,1
density-dependence	10548	-1769	10695,3
ibex	11257	416	11264,7
time series	11393	-609	11409,3
bighorn sheep	11138	3101	11561,6
large herbivores	11577	1567	11682,6
adult survival	12234	-761	12257,6
temporal variation	12507	243	12509,4
benthic diatoms	-12488	-1827	12620,9

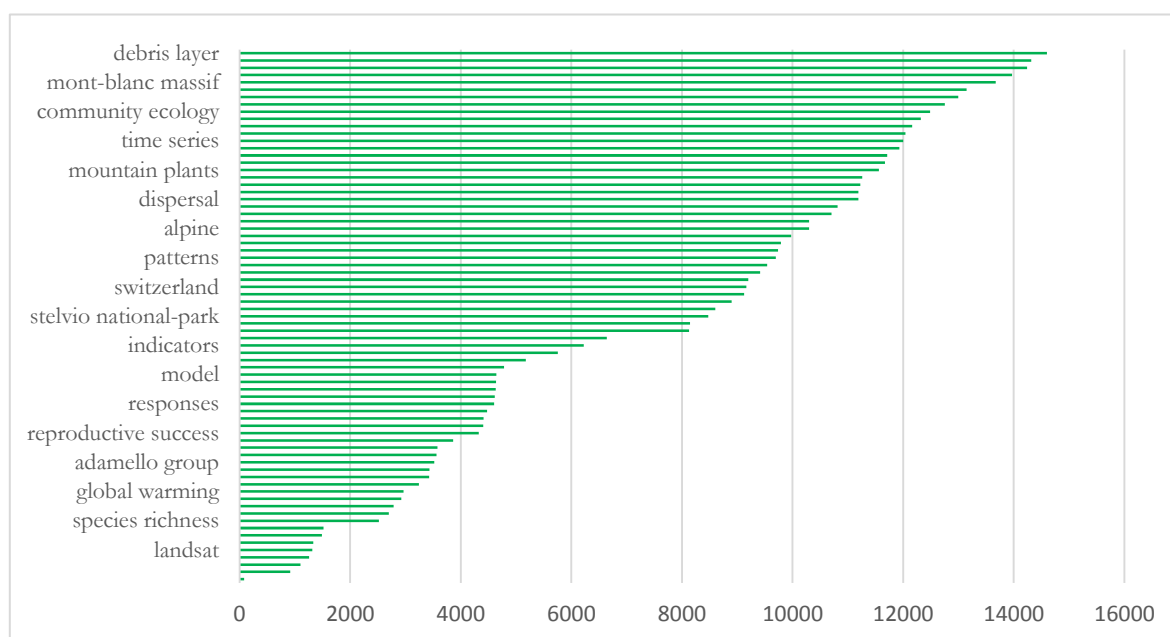


Figure III.9 Euclidean distance (R) from the center of the Network

The initial hypothesis is reinforced from a close view of the data and the associated R values. We calculated quartiles in order to divide the distribution data series into comparable units, and then identified research-specific terms. In order to calculate which cluster value occurred most in every quartile, we calculated the mode for every quartile. Cluster 2 is the most represented in quartile 4, even if the item with the highest outset from the centre belongs to cluster 1, the keywords of which occur most in quartile 2. Quartile 3 shows a dominance of keywords arising from cluster 3. Hence, clusters 2 and 3 display the highest R values on average and are the most “specialist” of the entire dataset<sup>30</sup>.

#### 4.3 DISCUSSION OF THE RESULTS

The most interesting results of the analysis arise from the clusters identified and their spatial arrangement, together with their connections. If the core of the network gathers more general keywords, the two most peripheral clusters disclose particularly meaningful information, since they explicitly or implicitly address a particular spatial dimension and narrower research fields. In Cluster 3, all the keywords entail easily recognizable connections with the field of glaciology, either toponyms or technical terminologies. Cluster 2 shapes very similar situations, as the particular object of interest – the

<sup>30</sup> Note that the two centralities do not necessarily overlap. From a topological standpoint, an edge can be peripheral even if it displays a high value of degree centrality. High R values in topologically peripheral edges define the presence of a node that is particularly important in its vicinity, but do not form any connections outside its small circle.

ibex, or more generally large herbivores – is the centre around which the entire cluster revolves. To a lesser, but still recognizable extent, part of cluster 1 shows a similar trend, since it focuses on high-altitude environments, namely alpine springs, and their fauna assemblages. The other three clusters share an interest in broader themes faced by the ecological sciences in relation to climate change.

The highest values of degree centrality are associated with general terms located in the centre of the map or in peripheral (in a more geographical term, “local”) nuclei located in the outer structures of the network. The relative positions of the terms coming from the glaciological lexicon or from large herbivores’ population dynamics clearly show that highly specialized research is positioned on the edges of the network, posing an interesting consideration on the centre–periphery relationship. Among the terms with the higher outset from the centre, there is no continuity in terms of research subjects, apart from independent “families” of specialized keywords. With the term “specialization” we are referring to these families of research studies: the groups are distinct from the rest of the network; their keywords co-occur frequently, but their ties with terms outside their cluster are weaker; their separation is recognizable on a mathematical level by the high R values associated with each keyword and with the lower reach of the links connecting the edges to the rest of the network. As an example, the term “large herbivores”, around which cluster 2 revolves in terms of connectivity, belongs to the 90th percentile considering the totality of the keywords indexed centrality-wise. The keyword defines a highly connected node, but the reach of its connections does not extend beyond the immediate neighbouring terms.

Additionally, the semantic analysis of the keywords suggests that on the one hand, cluster 3 is strongly linked with the geographical region of Stelvio National Park, while on the other cluster 2 suggests exclusive links with Gran Paradiso National Park, since it is the only one dealing with the study of the ibex in relation to climate change, as visible in table 3.1. It is also particularly interesting for the aims of this study to note that the most central cluster in topological term is associated with research focused on the Natura 2000 network.

From an interpretative standpoint, this two bodies of evidence – the geo-referencing of particular research interests and their relative separation from the larger body of literature – echo Livingstone’s view of different scientific cultures associated with the different places where science is conducted. Science obviously remains a large social undertaking, in which peculiar traits cannot be limited to the scale of the single PA. However, the specialization of a PA in a particular field of inquiry is nonetheless an interesting feature from a geographical perspective, since it can characterize different spaces of science. To be able to recognize the geographical origins of a thematic nucleus of keywords is significant, since it means that the research field is not diffused across multiple spatial entities. If Stelvio

is a laboratory for glaciological research, and Gran Paradiso serves as an observatory for the Alpine ibex, we could legitimately think that place still matters in the conduct of science, at least in our case study. Nevertheless, it would be a mistake to generalize this specialization trend to every PA, since a more precise geographical analysis of the sources of scientific literature – the places where the indexed studies have been carried out – is at this point necessary to push the inquiry further. In particular, this new aspect of the analysis could help to shed light on the dynamics that formed the structure of the central clusters of the network, made by keywords more widely shared among different clusters and research records. An answer to our set of theoretical questions, despite some new insights coming from the data, should be postponed to the end of study 2, crossing the information obtained.

Before moving on, however, it has to be noted that a piece of evidence of secondary importance is related to time. The temporal dimension shows that the literature has developed in recent times and at different rates. Additionally, the front of the research extends temporally up to 2018, demonstrating the vitality of the research question.

## 5 STUDY 2: RECONSTRUCTING THE GEOGRAPHY OF THE ALPINE RECORDS

### 5.1 METHODOLOGY

Once the dataset was defined, we geo-referenced the research records in the QGIS environment, in order to obtain points representing the location of every research record. However, the geographical information associated with the available metadata does not allow for a constant level of detail beyond the spatial scale of the administrative boundaries of the PA. As a result, some research studies could have been referenced at the spatial scale of a precise valley or locality, while others were at the level of the entire PA. In the light of this fundamental inhomogeneity of the data, the spatial scale selected was the one that guaranteed a constant level of data availability. Once the georeferenced points were plotted on the map, we overlapped the resulting layer with all the PAs of the Alpine range, derived from the online resource World Database of Protected Areas (WDPA), provided by the IUCN. This database is particularly appropriate for the task since it includes within its data all kinds of protected space defined by the IUCN, ranging from the larger National Parks to smaller category III areas. The data points contained in every polygon were counted with the function “*Count points in polygons*”. As a result, the function added an additional column to the table associated with the polygons geometry. At



this point, all the raw figures presenting values higher than 0 were selected, extracted in a new layer, and the associated geometry highlighted with graduated colours.

## 5.2 RESULTS FROM WEB OF SCIENCE ANALYSIS

From the coupling of every research record with a defined set of spatial coordinates, it is clear that research records tend to aggregate in just a few PAs, a minimal fraction of the entire protected surface of the Alpine range. In particular, only a few of these PAs serve as hotspots for climate change research, as immediately visible in the case of Stelvio National Park in Italy, which counts the higher number of climate change research records. The complete distribution of research records is schematized in figure III.10.

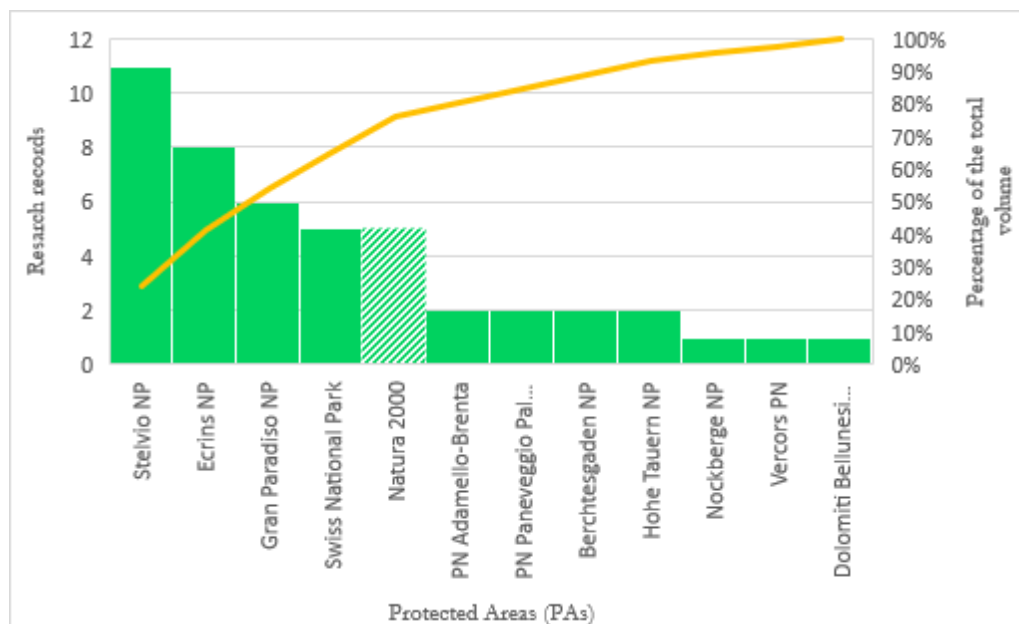


Figure III.10 Distribution of climate change research records in Alpine PAs. From Web of Science data

Considering the great number of PAs of different categories located within the Alpine Convention perimeter, climate change research is strongly concentrated in very few Parks and PAs. As a matter of fact, just eleven Parks have been objects of scientific investigations, either National Parks or Regional Nature Park.

Considering the great number of PAs of different categories located within the Alpine Convention perimeter, climate change research is strongly concentrated in very few Parks and PAs. As a matter of

fact, only eleven Parks have been objects of scientific investigations, either National Parks or Regional Nature Parks.

If taken together, four National Parks – Stelvio, Ecrins, Gran Paradiso, and SNP – aggregate 65% of the research indexed in the dataset. In addition, a fifth hotspot could be identified as the sum of all the research carried on in the setting of Natura 2000 sites. In this regard, Natura 2000 can be defined as a “mobile hotspot”: these sites effectively work as “spaces of climate science”, especially in relation to a broader context that does not produce scientific research on the topic. However, a cartographical representation of the areas coherent with the methodology adopted is difficult to achieve, since the articles do not state clearly the location of the observations conducted. All the other PAs represented on the map host either one or two research records.

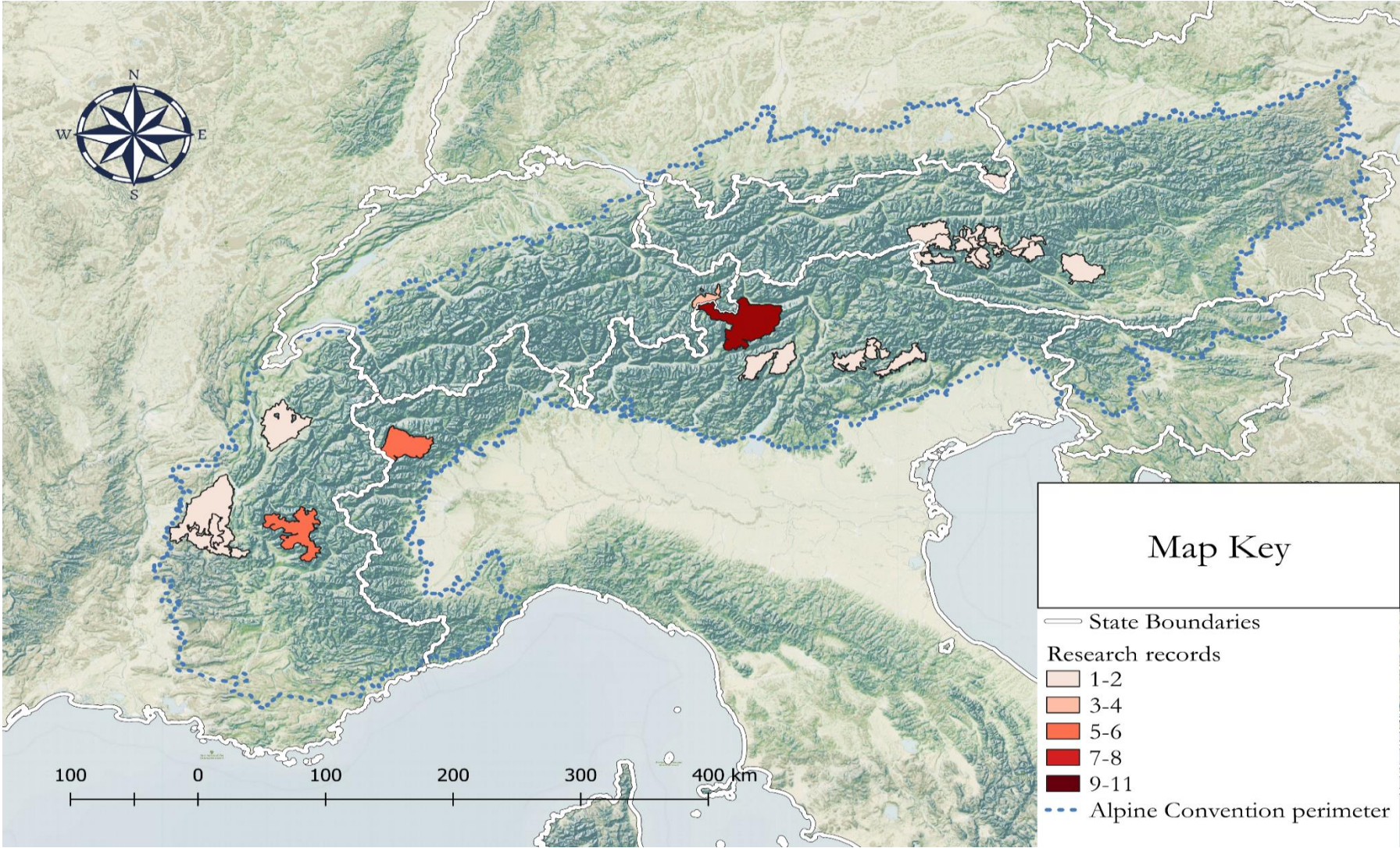


Figure III.11 Overview of the distribution of research records

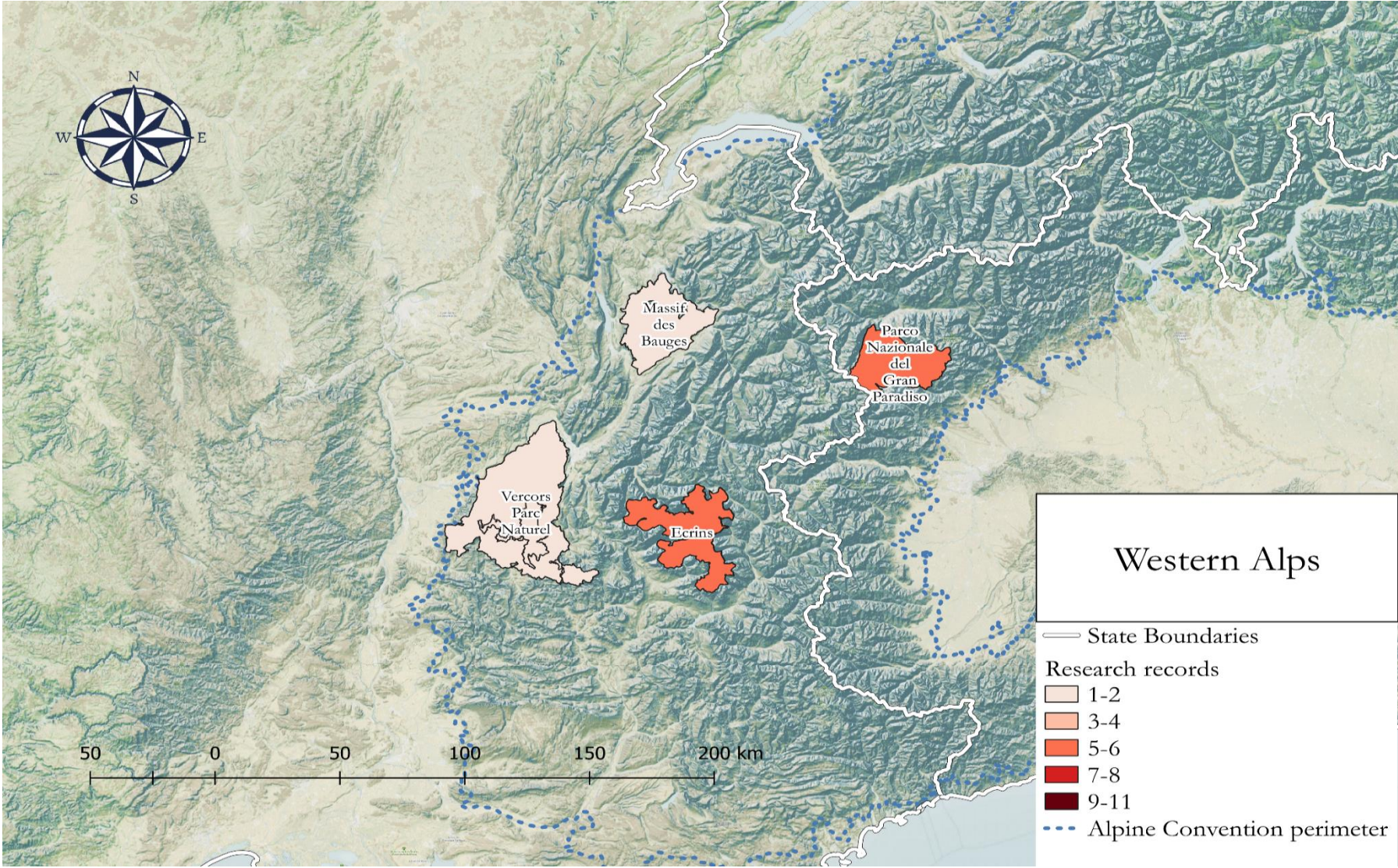


Figure III.12 Close-up on the Western Alps section

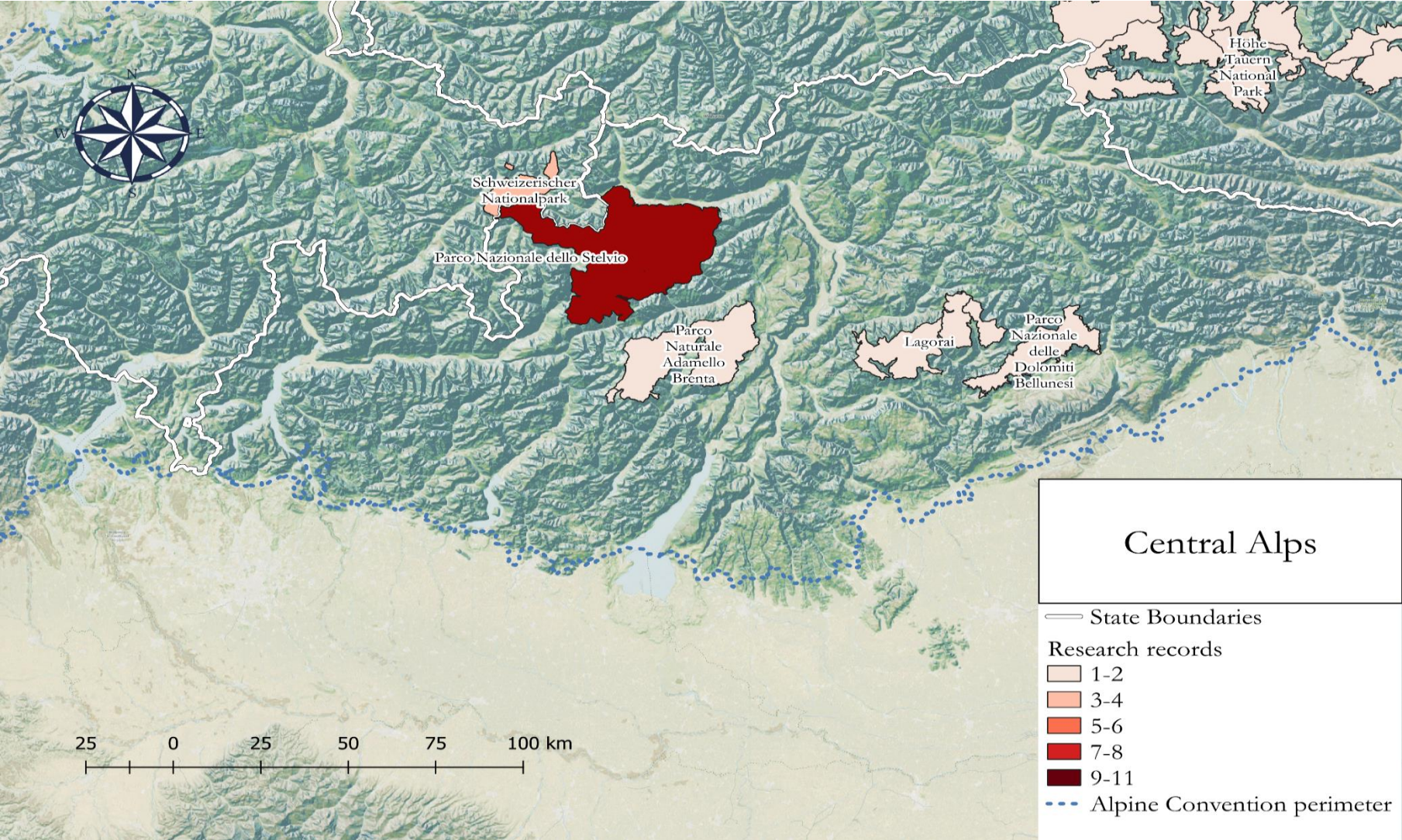


Figure III.13 Close-up of the Central Alps section

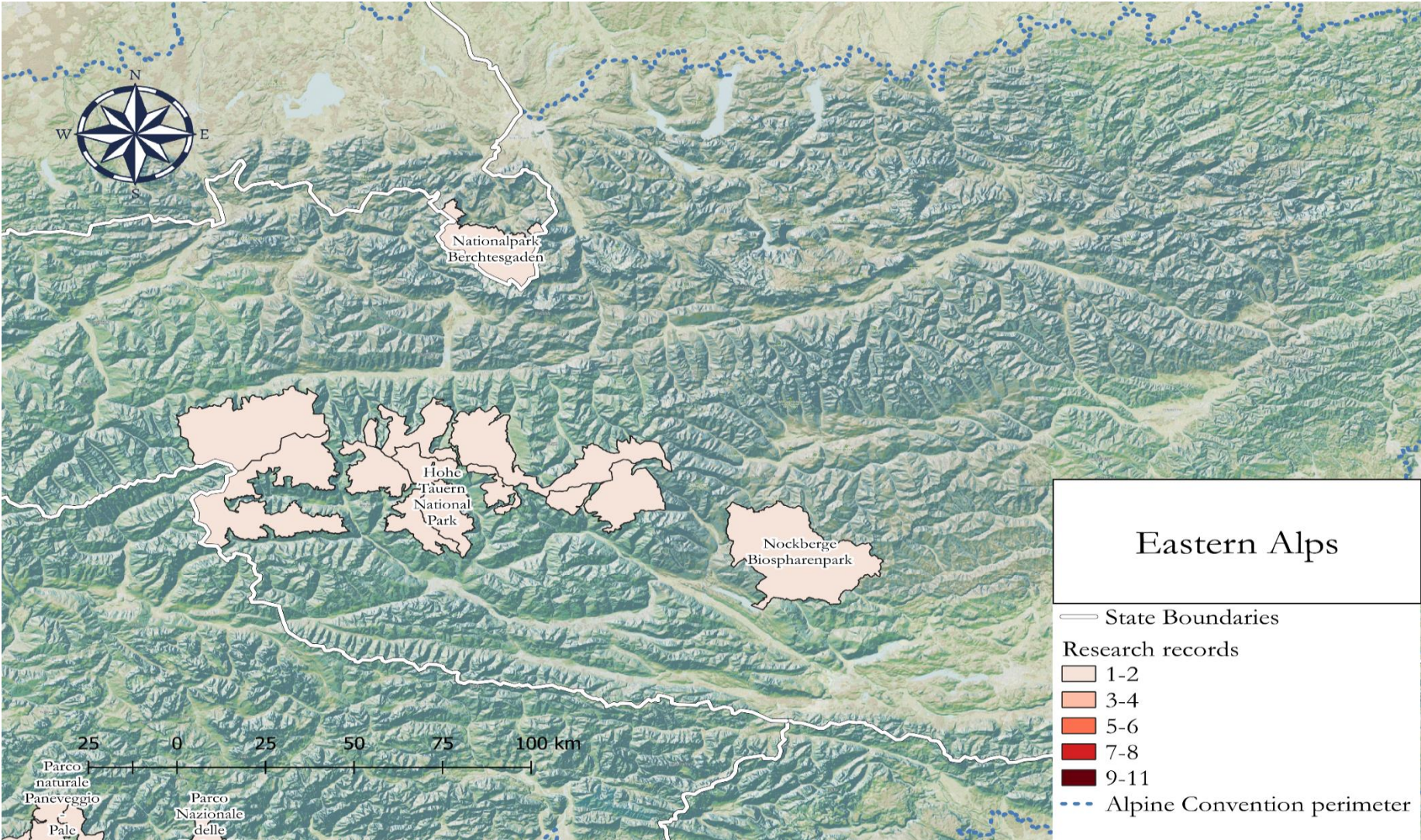


Figure III.14 Close-up of the Eastern Alps section

### 5.3 PUSHING THE BOUNDARIES OF THE INQUIRY: OVERCOMING THE OBSTACLE OF GREY LITERATURE VIA RESEARCH NETWORKS DETECTION

As already remarked, generating a map based solely on WoS-indexed publications is not enough if we are to draw a complete geography of scientific undertakings. The problem of grey literature is still to be overcome, and a systematic, encompassing methodology to successfully complete the task is yet to be defined. However, an attempt can be made following the lines of international scientific cooperation projects. These projects, especially if in the early stages, may leave no traces on the official scientific corpus of articles, but they obviously produce literature in the form of reports, working papers, conference presentations, and articles in non-indexed journals. Collecting these secondary traces of research is a rather unsystematic exercise, since no database can be queried<sup>31</sup>. Trying to fulfill the task of gathering reliable information poses challenges in the conduct of research, since online research in PAs' websites, the official websites of research networks, and research institutions has to be carried on without the help of any comprehensive database. Starting from this situation of unsystematized data, in the following section we focus on the detection of the different research networks operating currently – or, at least, whose functions ended recently – which address topics related to the effects of climate change. Where possible, literature associated with the networks will be presented, but their further analysis is beyond the scope of this study, since the methodology cannot be employed on non-standardized metadata.

In order to develop coherently a research strategy, a good starting point is checking international research projects on climate change encompassing the largest possible geographical scope. Looking for wide intercontinental research networks can be seen as a good entry strategy for this research task since they enjoy the highest visibility. In our case, obviously, these projects have to be focused on mountain environments. An attempt to gather and organize the data found is made in the following section. The complete list of publications associated with the different programmes is displayed in table III.4.

Amongst all the different networks, one of the best known and established is the Global Observation Research Initiative in Alpine environments (GLORIA). The programme operates on a worldwide long-term observation network with permanent plot sites in alpine – broadly intended as an

---

<sup>31</sup> A comprehensive database of research in Alpine PAs, the European Mountain Pool, has been recently shut down to comply with the General Data Protection Regulation (GDPR). The resource will be relaunched in the future, but the actual timing depends on the administration of the Swiss Academies of Arts and Sciences in Bern (Astrid Wallner, research coordinator for Swiss Alpine PA, personal communication).

ecosystem, without a particular geographical focus – environments, monitoring vegetation and temperature in every site. “GLORIA focuses on the alpine life zone (or high mountain area), which is defined here as the area above the low-temperature determined forestline and includes the treeline ecotone, the alpine, and nival elevation zones. The alpine life zone represents the only terrestrial biogeographic unit with a global distribution”. (Pauli et al., 2015; p. 15). The final goal of the programme is to collect trends in “species diversity, composition, abundance, and temperature, and to assess and predict losses in biodiversity in these fragile ecosystems which are under accelerating climate change pressures.” (GLORIA official website, <https://www.gloria.ac.at/>). The programme focuses especially on vascular plants and vegetation, but, where fundings and workforce are available, it extends to other organism groups, such as bryophytes, lichens, vertebrates, and arthropods. Quantification of the changes occurring in species and vegetation patterns are resurveyed cyclically every five or ten years and all the surveys are conducted with standardized methods, in order to ensure the spatial comparability of the data obtained. The purpose of GLORIA’s multi-summit approach is to build world-wide indicators of the impacts of climate change on the biodiversity of natural or semi-natural environments and to assess regional to large-scale risks of biodiversity losses. In the bigger picture, GLORIA aims at estimating the vulnerability of high mountain ecosystems under climate change pressures (Pauli et al., 2015).

The Alpine range contributes to the realization of this programme with multiple target regions. However, the sites located within PAs are few, with the most important of them being the Swiss National Parks, with two different summits, a siliceous and a carbonatic peak (Haller et al., 2013). Each of them has already been surveyed three times since their establishment, back in 2002. The surveys have already contributed to the publication of 4 research records, indexed in the Digital Object Repository of the WSL.

Another observation site is located at Mont Avic, in the Italian western Alps, part of the Mont Avic Natural Park, established in 2002, and, like the case of SNP, surveyed three times. One international publication is indexed in the Web of Science, although the previous searches were not able to detect it<sup>32</sup>.

The network comprises other National Parks from different Alpine countries: the Austrian Gesäuse National Park has devoted a site to GLORIA programme observations since 2009 which has been surveyed twice. Nevertheless, research records showing results are not available.

---

<sup>32</sup> The publication does not cite the term “protected area” in any of the metadata field. Title, abstracts and keywords do not show the use of the term; hence, the research record was undetectable using the main string of research.



In France, the National Park Mercantour observation site, established in 2001, has been surveyed only once in seventeen years; however, the scientific strategy for the period 2018-2022 highlights the necessity for a new survey in 2022 (*Stratégie Scientifique du Parc National Mercantour 2018-2022*, p. 28-29). A similar situation can be found in the case of the Berchtesgaden National Park, in Germany. The target region was set in 2004, and surveyed just once, without leaving detectable traces of research records stored in the local, national or international databases, outside the basic metadata displayed on the GLORIA programme's official website.

At a lower geographical level, other research networks can be found in the Alpine macroregion, for Alps-specific studies – research networks based solely on sites located within the Alps – or trans-regional studies, where groups of phenomena related to climate change are studied across a gradient of different environments and ecosystems, from mountainous to coastal. Within the latter group, a cross-border project, developed in an Interreg framework, was launched in 2010 and ended in 2013. The project was composed of nine partners – four in Slovenia and five in Italy – under the leading direction of the Triglav National Park. Of the total group of PAs involved, three of them belong to the Alpine range (Triglav, Dolomiti Friulane Nature Park, and Prealpi Giulie Nature Park), while the others range southward, following the coastline of the Adriatic sea. The CLIMAPARKS project was intended as something more than a pure research project conducted in different environments for purely scientific causes, and involved management contribution into the different work-packages into which it was split. From a scientific standpoint, the value of the project is found in its capacity to set a “year zero” for different monitoring – and associated research – projects in different parks that did not count in research and monitoring data before the beginning of the project (Vranješ, 2013; p.7), a testament to the effectiveness of this kind of geographical cooperation across wider geographical scales. The research conducted under the coordination of the project did not result in WoS-indexed publications; however, a detailed report has been published on ISSUU, an open publishing database (Vranješ et al., 2013).

On the border between Italy and France, another research network formed in recent years. The e-Pheno programme (2012-2014), follow-up of the older PhenoALP Interreg project (2008-2011), gathered phenologic data from a network of PAs and non-PAs in the western section of the Alps. The central idea of the research network was to monitor potential changes in phenological rhythm due to climate change. Phenology, in this case, is taken as a valid proxy for monitoring the evolution of climate change. The monitoring focused on grassland and subalpine larch forests ecosystems (Filippa, 2014). The programme officially involved the Ecrins National Park, Gran Paradiso National Park, Nature Park Mont Avic, and Massif des Bauges Nature Park, even if the latter, included among the partners of

the programme, does not show any monitoring site within the area<sup>33</sup>. The official website of the research initiative displays a section with all the publications directly linked to the data gathered by the project. However, the majority of them cannot be linked to the literature regarding PAs. Most of the sites involved in the studies are located outside PAs, while some of them do not directly address topics related to climate change, as they aim to test different observation methodologies. Only one of the research records indexed in the webpage satisfies our criteria of eligibility (Bocca et al., 2013).

The project is wide, from a geographical standpoint, but is not the only one to take place in this section of the Alpine range. On the same boundary between France and Italy, another project, still active in this case, is the LIFE project “PastorAlp”, addressing pasture vulnerability and possible adaptation strategies in the Alps (<http://www.pastoralp.eu>). The project combines biophysical and socioeconomic research in an attempt to face the undergoing changes in pasture environments, and involves Gran Paradiso and Ecrins National Park. The project is very recent, since it started its operations in late 2017, and still has to produce scientific publications<sup>34</sup>. However, PastorAlp is an ambitious project, as it aims at the definition of management guidelines during the expected five years of operations.

Even if not actively working yet, another transboundary monitoring project is currently being structured in the Alps. On the occasion of the 2018 edition of the *Forum Alpinum*, held in Breitenwang, Austria, a project focusing on monitoring spring ecosystems has been launched. Springs are seen as delicate ecosystems that can face substantial changes in species composition due to climate change since the species inhabiting the ecosystems are highly specialized<sup>35</sup>. The project will take place in different locations, within the boundaries of four PAs: Biosfera Val Mustair and Swiss National Park (Switzerland), Gesäuse National Park (Austria) and Berchtesgaden National Park (Germany). The project, despite being in very early stages, can already count on some WoS-indexed publications (already comprised within the initial dataset), that served as the cornerstone for the development of the transboundary interest.

Shifting our focus to research networks working on a national level, two monitoring programmes are currently developing in the French Alps. The networks *Reseau Lacs Sentinelles* and *Reseau Alpines Sentinelles* are monitoring the effects of climate change on different ecosystems. The former addresses the changes in high Alpine lakes from a multidisciplinary point of view, while the latter

<sup>33</sup> In the official website of the ePheno programme, a map of the currently operating station shows all the parks involved, without taking consideration of the Massif de Bauges Nature Park.

<sup>34</sup> One publication has already been produced, consisting of a poster presented at the European Geosciences Union General Assembly, held in Vienna, 8–13 April 2018. The poster showed a presentation of the project and its main goals.

<sup>35</sup> Personal communication of one of the leading scientist involved in the project, Stefanie Von Fumetti, ecologist from the University of Basel who chaired a session dedicated to the project at the 2018 Forum Alpinum.

focuses on the effects recorded in Alpine pastures. Both networks involve the Ecrins, Mercantour and Vanoise, the totality of French National Parks in the Alps. However, while the *Lacs Sentinelles* extends to the Natural Reserve Haute Savoie, the *Alpages Sentinelles* network is wider, touching the Regional Nature Parks Chartreuse, Vercors, Ventoux, and Luberon.

The last project addressed in this overview is found in Italy, where an ecological monitoring project focused on the measurement of biodiversity comprising many different PAs has been developed since 2005. Arising from a pilot study conducted on two altitudinal gradients in Gran Paradiso National Park, the monitoring initiative aims at spreading a standardized method for collecting observations in order to (I) collect data on animal biodiversity along altitudinal gradients and identify the main factors determining the current species distribution, (II) estimate the future risk of biodiversity loss, also applying climate change scenarios. and (III) identify species or groups more sensitive to environmental and climatic changes in order to determine new biodiversity and ecological indicators. In 2006 the project was incorporated into the Interreg programme “Gestalp”, and between 2007 and 2008 extended to two additional PAs, Orsiera Rocciavré Nature Park, and Alpe Veglia Devero Nature Park, both in Piedmont. The programme was further developed due to new funding coming from the Italian Ministry of the Environment in the period 2012-2014. On this occasion, the first surveys in the initial PAs were repeated, while the network embraced three additional National Parks: Val Grande, Stelvio, and Dolomiti Bellunesi. The project led to four research articles over the years, but these contributions are written in Italian and not indexed in the Web of Science database.

All these scientific networks make the wide jigsaw of research activities on climate change that characterize the Alps and actively produce – in different publishing contexts – the literature that serves as an informative basis for adaptive management of the natural heritage. Table III.4 provides an overview of the PAs involved in each monitoring programme, while figures ranging from 3.10 to 3.13 visualize the spatial dimension of the networks in the Alpine range.

## 5.4 DISCUSSION OF THE RESULTS

The data deriving from the two separate analyses can provide some useful insight for an overview of the research panorama. Research conducted on the topic of climate change in Alpine PAs is, from the point of view of indexed research records, an occasional activity. It seems that no consistent effort can be clearly traced on a macroregional level, since the spatial distribution of research products is very concentrated in few hotspots, while the majority of Alpine PAs range from one

research record indexed to none at all. At this scale of the analysis, it is difficult to understand what the forces actually are that shape the geographical distribution. The only phenomenon that is possible to note is that research on climate change tends to occur more and more often in those National Parks which are usually a historical and geographical entity with a long environmental history. This positive correlation between the historicity of the institution and the number of climate research records may suggest that these places can count on internal factors influencing positively the conduct of research. The most explicate cases are perhaps Stelvio National Park and Gran Paradiso National Park. The former has developed an almost pure cluster of glaciology. When the records are closely analysed, the research cluster shows signs of a structured interest in its approach to the area. Most of the contributions are focused on the Forni Glacier, in the Ortles-Cevedale group, and different methodologies are used for collecting observations. In this regard, the glacier serves as a functioning space for science, where methodologies are tested and new research of potential interest to the Park is generated. However, the scientific dimension of the Park goes beyond serving as a benchmark for validation of scientific methodologies; one of the research records addresses long-time observations (D'Agata et al., 2014), while another deals with the geomorphological consequences of the glacier shrinkage (Smiraglia, Diolaiuti, 2010). The variety of records suggests that this cluster can be regarded as an autonomous research programme completely developed in the PA. In the same light, Gran Paradiso displays another interesting example. The research records associated with the PA are all coming from ecology, as they focus on the potential impact that climate change can exert on the ibex population. The ibex, one of the most charismatic species of the Alpine range, historically finds a home in Gran Paradiso National Park. In particular, how the Gran Paradiso's population served as source population for different operations of reintroduction is widely addressed in the scientific and generalistic literature. Research on the ibex is obviously a core topic in Gran Paradiso, and climate change here finds fertile ground as a topic of study.

From these two examples, and more generally from the distribution highlighted, it appears that – *ceteris paribus* – a long history of scientific research in a PA increases the chances of the rise of new research. Put briefly, research already stored in the PA might have a positive feedback effect on the growth of new research. In particular, the two examples highlights how a core cluster of accumulated research on a topic (that entails strong interest for the PA) might serve, borrowing a term from Conservation Biology's vocabulary, as *keystone research*<sup>36</sup>, the presence of which is able to influence strongly the

---

<sup>36</sup> *Keystone species, in ecology, a species that has a disproportionately large effect on the communities in which it occurs [...] derived from the practice of using a wedge-shaped stone to support the top of an arch in a bridge or other construction. Just as other stones in the construction depend on the keystone for support, other species in a biological community depend on the presence of a keystone species to maintain the community's structure.* (Encyclopaedia Britannica)

capability of the PAs to inquire into the effects of climate change in their territories and on objects of particular interest for the PA.

However, the second part of the study has led to better understanding of one of the main infrastructures for the co-construction and circulation of research, i.e. the scientific networks. The utility of this approach was twofold. First, it helped to keep track of research records not indexed in WoS core collection. The contributions found through smaller and less known international channels, and often not written in English, are obviously to be considered meaningful and – from a PA's perspective – helpful information, but it is to be noted that the circulation potential of these data is sensibly reduced, in particular, if we are to compare data inter-regionally. Second, highlighting climate change research networks helped the visualization of possible paths that research can travel in the Alpine range. If the first part of the study considered the PAs as islands, where research activities develop independently of one another, the second part of the study showed how this archipelago is actually interconnected, and different islands can cooperate to construct research activities together and exchange standardized data.

Scientific projects in a PA can be autonomous in their development, and the WoS dataset analysis showed that smaller PAs can also produce research in this way, even if in reduced amounts in the case of climate change. Nevertheless, the reconstruction of the networks highlights how the involvement in wider geographical entities can foster the developing of the process, and probably counter the effect of previous research accumulation on the rise of new research. However, the networks traced cannot cover the entire Alpine range, since even this particular geography can not display either a constant density of edges, nor a stable number of links connecting the edges. In particular, the northern part of the central section of the range is evidently disconnected, resulting in a quasi-isolation of the Swiss subregion, with the exception of the research-hub constituted by the Swiss National Park. Additionally, it is clear that many networks do not cover the entire surface of the Alpine Convention. Outside the GLORIA programme, which displays the longest paths through the Alps and crosses the highest number of boundaries, the majority of the edges are organized in sub-regional networks, with a stronger concentration around the border between France and Italy. As a consequence, from a centre-periphery relationship standpoint, the general network is decentralized. The majority of the transboundary networks cross just one border, while two networks operate on a national level. Hence, just one component (GLORIA) of the larger network is truly operating on the macroregional level. The map overviewing the networks is shown in figure III.15, while the associated research articles are reported in table III.7.

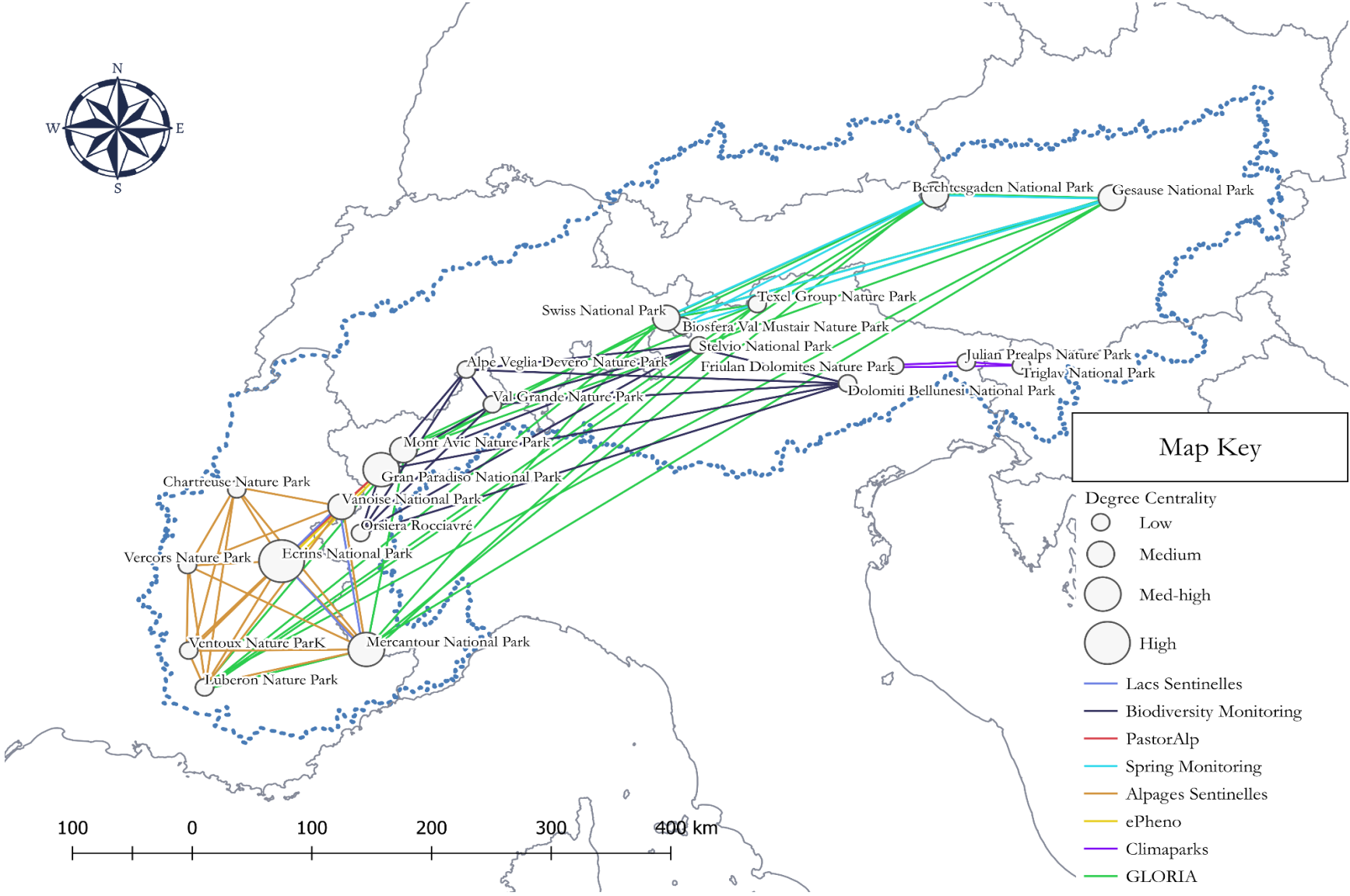


Figure III.15 Overview of the research network

Table III.5 Research network and PAs involved	RESEARCH NETWORKS								
	PA	GLO RIA	CLIMAP ARKS	ePh eno	Lacs Sentinell es	Alpages Sentinelles	Spring Monitorin g	Pastor Alps	Biodiversity Monitoring Italy
1	Alpe Veglia Devero Nature Park								●
2	Berchtesgaden National Park	●					●		
3	Biosfera Val Müstair Nature Park						●		
4	Chartreuse Nature Park					●			
5	Dolomiti Bellunesi National Park								●
6	Ecrins National Park			●	●	●		●	
7	Friulan Dolomites Nature Park		●						

8	IV. Gesause National Park	•					•		
9	Gran Paradiso National Park			•				•	•
10	Julian Prealps Nature Park		•						
11	Luberon Nature Park	•				•			
12	Mercantour National Park	•			•	•			
13	Mont Avic Nature Park	•		•					
14	Orsiera Rocciavré Nature Park								•
15	Stelvio National Park								•
16	Swiss National Park	•					•		
17	Texel Group Nature Park	•							



18	Triglav National Park		•						
19	Val Grande National Park								•
20	Vanoise National Park				•	•			
21	Ventoux Nature Park					•			
22	Vercors Nature Park					•			

Table III.6 Research article detected in the "grey literature"	Authors	Publication	Year	Database
GLORIA	Wipf, S.; Rixen, C.; Bauch, K. (Ed.),	Long-term changes in summit plant diversity in the Swiss National Park. 6th symposium for research in protected areas, 741-744. doi: 10.1553/np_symposium2017s1	2018	DORA WSL
GLORIA	Winkler, M.; Lamprecht, A.; Steinbauer, K.; Hülber, K.; Theurillat, J.; Breiner, F.; Choler, P.; Ertl, S.; Gutiérrez Girón, A.; Rossi, G.; Vittoz, P.; Akhalkatsi, M.; Bay, C.; Benito Alonso, J.; Bergström, T.; Carranza, M.L.; Corcket, E.; Dick, J.; Erschbamer, B.; ... Pauli, H.,	The rich sides of mountain summits – a pan-European view on aspect preferences of alpine plants. <i>Journal of Biogeography</i> , 43 (11), 2261-2273. doi: 10.1111/jbi.12835	2016	DORA WSL
GLORIA	Wild, R.; Imboden, R.,	GLORIA 2015. 8 Gipfel, 128 1-m <sup>2</sup> -Flächen, 128000 1-dm <sup>2</sup> -Felder. Cratschla, 10-11.	2016	DORA WSL
GLORIA	Wipf, S	Ergebnisse Gloria SNP 2015. Cratschla, 12-13.	2016	DORA WSL
GLORIA	Grünwald, N.J.; Goss, E.M.; Ivors, K.; Garbelotto,	Standardizing the nomenclature for clonal	2009	DORA WSL

	M.; Martin, F.N.; Prospero, S.; Hansen, E.; Bonants, P.J.M.; Hamelin, R.C.; Chastagner, G.; Werres, S.; Rizzo, D.M.; Abad, G.; Beales, P.; Bilodeau, G.J.; Blomquist, C.L.; Brasier, C.; Brière, S.C.; Chandelier, A.; Widmer, T.L.	lineages of the sudden oak death pathogen, <i>Phytophthora ramorum</i> . <i>Phytopathology</i> , 99 (7), 792-795. doi: 10.1094/PHYTO-99-7-0792		
Alpages Sentinelles	; L. DOBREMEZ, M. DELLA-VEDOVA, J.P. LEGEARD	Les alpages sentinelles	2013	Irstea
Alpages Sentinelles	L. DOBREMEZ, B. NETTIER, J.P. LEGEARD, B. CARAGUEL, L. GARDE, S. VIEUX, S. LAVOREL, M. DELLA-VEDOVA	« Les alpages sentinelles : Un dispositif original pour une nouvelle forme de gouvernance partagée face aux enjeux climatiques », <i>Revue de géographie alpine</i>	2014	Irstea
Alpages Sentinelles	B. NETTIER, L. DOBREMEZ, G. BRUNSCHWIG	« Prendre en compte les interactions entre alpages et exploitations dans les systèmes agropastoraux : une revue bibliographique », <i>INRA Productions animales</i> n°4	2015	Irstea
Alpages Sentinelles	B. NETTIER, L. DOBREMEZ, S. LAVOREL, G. BRUNSCHWIG	« Resilience as a framework for analyzing the adaptation of mountain summer pasture systems to climate change », <i>Ecology and</i>	2018	Irstea

		Society		
Alpages Sentinelles	I. ARPIN, A. COSSON	« What the ecosystem approach does to conservation practices ? »	2018	Irstea
ePheno	M. Bocca, E. Caprio, D. Chamberlain, A. Rolando	The winter roosting and diet of Black Grouse Tetrao tetrix in the north-western Italian Alps. Journal of Ornithology, 10.1007/s10336-013-1000-1	2013	ePheno
CLIMAPARKS	M. Krofel, R. Lustrik, M. Stergar, K. Jerina	Habitat use of Alpine Chamois ( <i>Rupicapra rupicapra</i> ) in Triglav National Park	2013	ISSUU
CLIMAPARKS	A. Arih	Triglav National Park forests in the light of climate change	2013	ISSUU
CLIMAPARKS	B. Bradškja, M. Vranješ	Analysis of certain data on visitation to the tourist destination of the Julian Alps and Triglav National Park	2013	ISSUU
CLIMAPARKS	V. N. Cannone, M. Buccheri, P. Glerean, G. Bogliani, V. Lencioni, M. Gobbi	VI. Design of a uniform methodology for monitoring and assessing the impact of Climate Change on biodiversity	2013	ISSUU

CLIMAPARKS	N. Cannone	Results of the first year of monitoring of habitat and flora in the Canin Glacier Area (Julian Prealps Regional Park)	2013	ISSUU
CLIMAPARKS	G. Oriolo	Preliminary considerations on the flora and vegetation monitoring methodology and the 2012 mapping campaign	2013	ISSUU
CLIMAPARKS	A. Scariot, M. Cassol, S. Vettorel	Monitoring the habitat and floral species in Ciadin della Meda (Dolomiti Friulane Nature Park)	2013	ISSUU
CLIMAPARKS	G. Oriolo	Preliminary remarks on a unified method for monitoring and analyzing climate change impacts on biodiversity and on the first year surveying of plant species performed in 2012	2013	ISSUU
CLIMAPARKS	F. Minatelli, E. Mian	Monitoring tourists flows in the area of the Dolomiti Friulane Nature Park in 2011 and 2012 and assessing Climate Change impact on visits to park	2013	ISSUU

## 6 VENUES OF SCIENCE, CIRCULATION OF RESEARCH, AND SCIENTIFIC CULTURES

Using once again Livingstone’s terminology, different PAs are serving as “venues of science” for climate research. However, it is possible to trace an uneven geography in the distribution of these venues. Just a small part of the PAs’ system actively hosts research projects on the topic. At the same time, both the circulation of research products and the design of monitoring networks on the effects of climate change suggest different degrees of involvement in the scientific task.

Crossing the results of the two separate studies on the Web of Science database, an interesting pattern emerges. Research records indexed in the Web of Science show a particular spatial arrangement, based on the primacy of historical National Parks. These parks’ footprint is visible on a geographical level – since the distribution of research data source is highly concentrated – but also on a content level.

From an operative point of view, Parks and other PAs represented in the Web of Science dataset serve as repositories of scientific records. The analysis of the data stored helped to chart the association between particular spaces and specific research interests, or, conversely, scientific projects shared by multiple PAs. In particular, the data allows some trends to be visualized:

- (I) Study 1 underlines how research conducted in historical National Parks can show traces of a strong thematic coherence, forming research clusters with multiple inner connections between research records. From the ibex focus of the Gran Paradiso, to the accumulation of glaciological studies in the Stelvio, National Parks leave evident traces of their own scientific styles and interests in the general map of climate change research. The case of Stelvio is particularly striking in this regard. The PA has the highest number of Web of Science research records, but its degree of centrality in international networks is very low. As a result, research conducted in the Park is highly recognizable and forms a strong, relatively close, cluster since the records indexed in Web of Science are all focused on glaciological analyses.
- (II) On the other end of the spectrum, some National Parks carry out research focused on multiple objects of interest and are part of observations networks working on different ecosystems, species communities or disciplines, as in the case of the Ecrins or the Swiss National Park. In particular, in the case of the Ecrins, the research carried out is indistinguishable on the keywords map, since its terms are shared widely among the dataset, and the co-word analysis cannot help to identify the site-specific cluster, despite the high number of records. The fact is certainly positively correlated with the high degree of

inclusion in research networks of the PA, which shows the higher degree centrality in the dataset of the second study. Ecrins conducts research with a different, more thematically open, and collaborative style.

Additionally, the reconstruction of scientific networks highlighted three main factors:

- (I) Research indexed in the Web of Science is just a sample of the total population, since research records resulting directly from the operations of networks are often published in non-indexed scientific journals. Whether or not this sample can be considered representative is still to be determined, since the volume of the non-indexed literature cannot be estimated precisely, but should be inquired into in depth. Nevertheless, the grey literature detected clarified a point: PAs associated with highly-specialized research can be conducting projects on different objects of interest as well, but the publication of the results might take place at different stages. The case of Gran Paradiso, for example, can be particularly telling. The Park is involved in other research projects apart from the ibex monitoring displayed by the Web of Science, and its level of degree centrality in the PA network is rather high thanks to the many monitoring projects it is part of. This fact does not diminish the importance of the Park as a hub for research on the ibex and the impact of climate change. On the contrary, of the many research studies carried out so far, the ibex research is the only one published in international journals and circulating worldwide.
- (II) From the perspective of the process of making climate change science, the analysis highlighted how research networks act as infrastructure for the widening of research projects toward new PAs. Parks with no research tracks recorded in the database are getting involved in broad programmes and become part of a network where scientific information – in the form of data know-how and shared methodologies of work – can travel from place to place. However, these networks differ from one another in geographical location, scope, size and level of internationality, and only one of them – the GLORIA programme – operates at the scale of the whole macroregion. Additionally, wide sections of the Alps are underrepresented among the edges of the network. Switzerland, as the most evident example, is not included in any monitoring programmes outside the Swiss National Park.
- (III) Smaller and more recent Parks do not, on the whole, share the same channels of research diffusion as larger, older and more scientifically affirmed PAs. The circulation of research products does indeed happen through different channels, with different potentials of diffusion.

Research conducted in National Parks is written in English, enjoys global accessibility thanks to the inclusion in wider research databases, and plays the role of the calling card for the entire body of “official” and “grey” literature. The analysis of the scientific network studying climate change in the Alps highlighted how minor PAs, even when involved in climate change research projects, more rarely publish in peer reviewed international journals, and the knowledge they produce frequently circulates only at a sub-regional level. Research studies, it turns out, have different degrees of “mobility” and accessibility.

From a geography of science standpoint, the analysis provides much useful information. National Parks today play the role of science venues, and their traces are detectable quantitatively, since they gather the majority of scientific records and form the largest nodes of monitoring networks. Their traces are also visible in the literature, where they form the bulk of indexed research, whether forming very specific research programmes or creating strong networks that contribute to diversifying research. If the first study highlighted the strong, easily identifiable footprint of Stelvio and Gran Paradiso National Parks, the second study highlighted how Ecrins and Swiss National Parks display a different, but equally fundamental, research composition. At the same time, the circulation of climate change knowledge is influenced by the whereabouts of scientific research. More precisely, research conducted within historical, widely recognized PAs enjoys a wider diffusion.

The concept of “scientific culture” can take different forms. It ranges from the selection of particular objects of research interest to the number of scientific connections that a PA has built on the topic of climate change, as well as its capacity to promote its research on a world-wide circulation network such as the Web of Science, or regional network and journals. All these elements are still rather unsystematic, and still do not provide a solid baseline that describes the scientific culture associated with different PAs. In order to do so, these elements have to be verified on the ground with scientists, park managers and practitioners, but they at least provide some insights into how research is conducted and how different social forces shape scientific projects within the boundaries of the PAs.

These results open many new questions. First, on a purely geographical level, what are the reasons behind the spatial distribution of research products and networks? Why do some sub-regions produce more research than others? Why do the networks not extend to some subregions of the Alpine range?

Secondly, attention could be directed towards the grey literature. If we are to overview the complete landscape of climate change research in PAs, what is the role of grey literature in the story? How could this new information change the research landscape previously mapped? What are the



factors that prevent research produced in smaller PAs from circulating its results on higher spatial scales? Can we trace pieces of grey literature outside the research networks? Do the contents of grey literature overlap with the Web of Science dataset, or do the two contents differ?

And from an operational, park-centred perspective, is the availability of previous research records or data really a *conditio sine qua non* for the development of climate change research programmes? Can we trace other limiting or favourable factors?

In order to address at least some of these questions, the next chapter will shift the focus to a new geographical scale. The analysis will explore some of the factors that shape research at the sub-regional level. Hence, the case of Switzerland will be studied from a close perspective. Switzerland, as previously highlighted, shows a distinctive geographical pattern of production, since the Swiss National Park is the only PA with a tangible track of research records on the topic. Switzerland will serve as a laboratory in which we can verify how scientific cultures work and come to be shaped. The absence of publications in the Web of Science sample, together with the exclusion from the main monitoring networks suggests starting from the simplest of the questions. Is research on climate change a topic of research that differs in Swiss PAs from research in the National Park?

## IV. The making of a scientific subregion: constructing climate change science, conserving nature in Swiss protected areas

### 1. PROTECTED AREAS AND SCIENTIFIC RESEARCH IN SWITZERLAND

Despite being historically and traditionally associated in common understanding with ideas of respect for the land and care of the country's natural heritage, Switzerland displays a more complex relationship with conservation than one might expect. The history of Swiss contemporary conservation is actually quite recent, since almost all the protected areas were founded in the first decade of the 21<sup>st</sup> century. The first ideas, however, of setting aside a piece of land in order to spare it from the growth of modernity are traced back to the beginning of the 20<sup>th</sup> century, when Paul Sarasin led the national conservation movement towards the creation of the Swiss National Park (Kupper, 2014), a groundbreaking event in the history of protected areas worldwide. At that time, protected areas represented a completely new concept for Europe, and the Swiss National Park played the role of the pioneer, paving the way for the proliferation of the concept throughout the continent. However, Switzerland itself did not take part in this growth spurt, leaving the National Park as the only stronghold of nature conservation in the whole country<sup>37</sup>. Things changed dramatically with the revision of the *Nature and Cultural Heritage Act* almost a century later, in 2007 (Galland, 2011). With a much-needed update in legislation, Switzerland opened its doors to the rise of new categories of protected areas: the Regional and National Nature Parks. If the Swiss National Park had stood for more than a century as a temple for science, an open-air laboratory, with its long history of success, inspiration, struggles and malfunctions, these areas were born in response to a different need from that of their famous ancestor and serve as multifunctional spaces, where sustainable local development aims to meet cases of conservation and democratic inclusion. These new Swiss protected areas are the result of bottom-up processes, where the initial input for the foundation process comes directly from the local population, and the multiplicity of goals is indicative of their complex nature as instruments of regional development. Together with this new form of land protection, Switzerland has seen the creation of ten UNESCO World Heritage sites – three of them natural areas – and the capillary penetration of Ramsar sites and Federal Hunting Reserves. As a result, conservation is today played on

---

<sup>37</sup> During this century-long timespan, Switzerland did actually see some new forms of protection for particular biotopes or landscapes, from the Federal Inventory of Landscapes and Natural Monument of national importance (1977) to the *Rotothenturm Initiative*, but did not establish new protected areas, as happened widely in the rest of Europe.

an intricate jigsaw of lands and territories, all serving different purposes and varying greatly in size. The total number of Parks and World Heritage natural sites amounts today to twenty, comprising one National Park, *Naturparks* and suburban parks.

The task of inquiring about the role of science in these heterogeneous land units is an intricate one. To find, foster and structure a dimension for science in these land units is the responsibility of a dedicated office in the Swiss Academy of Arts and Science in Bern, the Swiss Park Research, founded by the Federal Office for the Environment (FOEN). As stated in the official website:

*“Because of their special status the parks of national importance gain increased importance as reference and preference areas for comparative research of different research topic of national and international interest. Swiss Park Research aims to support the parks of national importance and other protection areas (for example, UNESCO World Heritage Sites) in the field of research and to enable their collaboration on priority themes”.*

In the office’s view, protected areas (henceforth PAs) should act as reference and preference areas for scientific projects. The function of the office itself is to support the development of research programmes and projects in the contexts of the PAs.

The office's work in recent years has resulted in the definition of a thematic catalogue that highlights the main foci of inter and transdisciplinary research to be developed in the parks<sup>38</sup>. Interdisciplinary topics have been proposed, spanning from the parks’ identity to landscape development, from ecosystems services and biodiversity to comparative studies with non-parks area, from parks governance to regional and economic development (Wallner 2012). Under the control of the same office, an online resource has been made available in order to keep track of all the research carried on in the parks, both in recent times (three years or less) and in historical times in the case of the older protected areas like the Swiss National Park. The online resource enables the researcher to enquire about the distribution of research activities in the parks and understand their particular geography, consisting of historical hotspots, new areas of scientific monitoring and multisite comparative research projects.

---

<sup>38</sup> Research themes belonging to single disciplines were excluded by the catalogue, not because of lack of need for this kind of scientific interests. Disciplinary research, in fact, is regarded as the basic instrument needed to set up systematic monitoring programs (Wallner 2012, p.39)

Table IV.1 Research in PAs divided per single PA (column), number (#) of research records and percentage (%) of research produced on the total volume of research records stored in the database. Data from Parkforschung.ch.

Protected Area	Recent (>3 years) researches (#)	Recent (>3 years) researches (%)	Total researches (#)	Total researches (%)
Regional Nature Park Beverin	3	0.8	10	0.7
Regional Nature Park Binntal	1	0.3	11	0.8
Regional Nature Park Biosfera Val Müstair	39	9.9	90	6.4
Regional Nature Park Chasseral	9	2.3	19	1.4
Regional Nature Park Diemtigtal	4	1.0	17	1.2
Regional Nature Park Doubs	6	1.5	9	0.6
Regional Nature Park Ela	29	7.4	72	5.1
Regional Nature Park Gantrisch	19	4.8	47	3.3
Regional Nature Park Gruyère Pays-d'Enhaut	7	1.8	13	0.9
Regional Nature Park Jura Vaudois	9	2.3	35	2.5
Regional Nature Park Jurapark Aargau	4	1.0	13	0.9
Regional Nature Park Pfyn-Finges	11	2.8	114	8.1
Regional Nature Park Schaffhausen	5	1.3	6	0.4
Regional Nature Park Thal	9	2.3	21	1.5
Swiss Alps Jungfrau-Aletsch UNESCO World Heritage Site	22	5.6	83	5.9
Swiss National Park	135	34.4	553	39.4
Swiss Tectonic Arena Sardona UNESCO World Heritage Site	7	1.8	35	2.5
UNESCO Biosphärenreservat Engiadina Val Müstair	6	1.5	10	0.7
UNESCO Biosphere Reserve	24	6.1	146	10.4

<b>Entlebuch</b>				
<b>Wildnispark Zurich Sum</b>	43	10.9	94	6.7
<b>Total</b>	393	100.0	1403	100.0

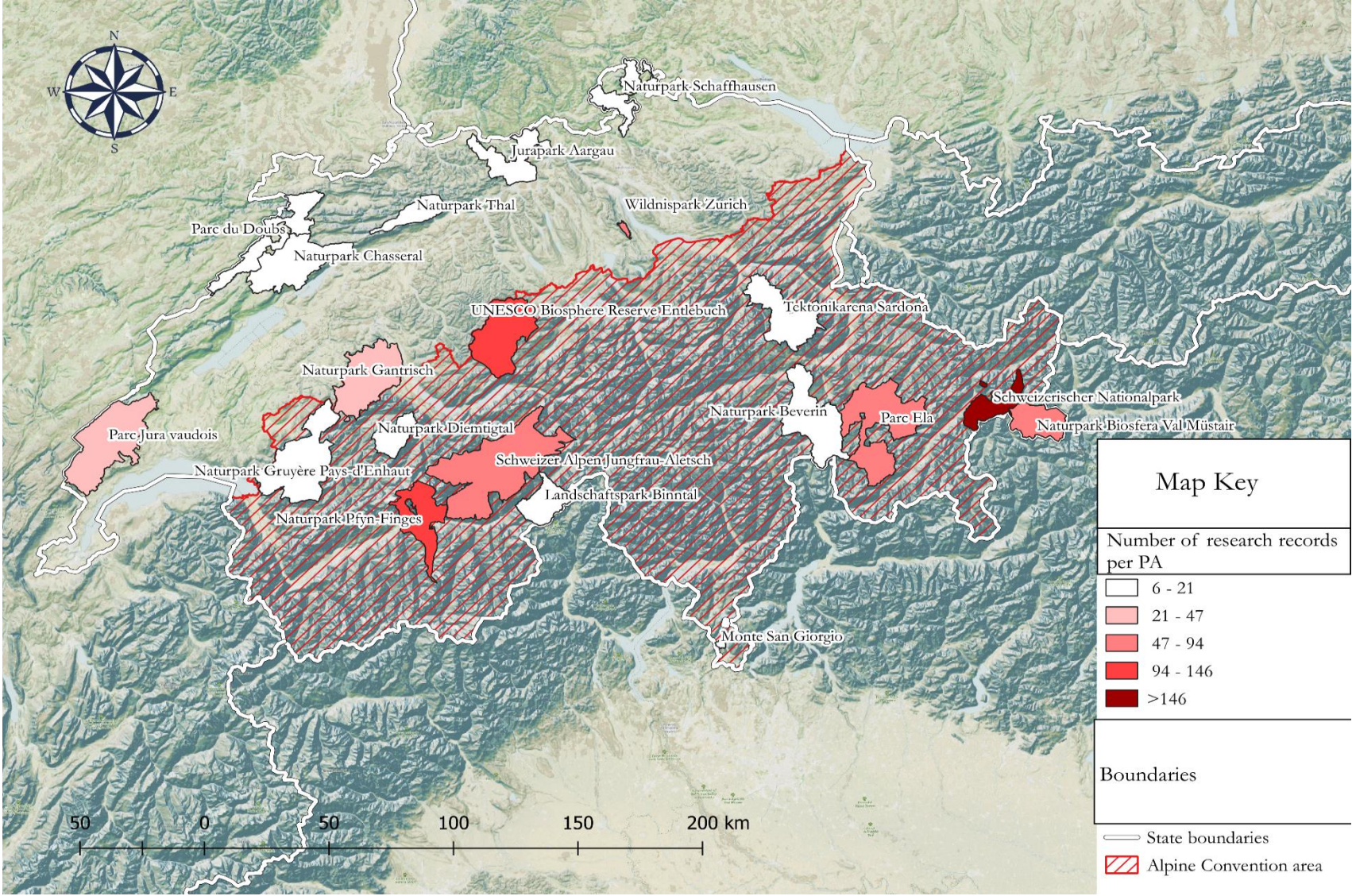


Figure IV.1 Number of total research records filed in every Park in Switzerland. Data from Parkforschung.ch

From this general overview is possible to understand the degree of scientific activities taking place in the parks. Swiss parks are – to different extents – all involved in scientific research projects and some of them have large archives of stored research. If the Swiss National Park's role as the leading figure (39.4% of the overall volume of research produced in the Swiss parks, 34.4% of new research projects) remains unquestioned, the general research landscape highlights the rise of new protected areas involved in the search for science-based answers to questions regarding the impact, aims and governance of Swiss parks. In particular, the highest concentration of research in these relatively new protected areas is to be found in the UNESCO Biosphere Reserve Entlebuch (n=146, 10.4% of the total amount) and the Regional Nature Park Pfyn-Finges (n=114, 8.1%), while the most scientifically active parks in the last three years are the Wildnispark Zurich (n=43, 10.9%) and Regional Nature Park Biosfera Val Mustair (n=39, 9.9%). Clearly, this kind of online resource, as provided by the Swiss Park Research office, represents an escape from the problem of gray literature and allows us to keep track of every scientific undertaking, regardless of the formal requirements that tools like the Web of Science pose.

Coming back to the principal focus of this work, the task of quantifying the actual volume of climate change research stored in the database reveals an interesting configuration. Regardless of the growth rate of scientific research in Swiss parks, and the high policy-relevance on climate change topics in the Swiss context<sup>39</sup>, the question of the impact of climate change on protected areas remains largely unanswered, and significantly, even often unasked. In order to understand the precise spatial distribution of climate research in protected areas, in the present work the database has been mined, looking for terms related to the domain of climate change in titles, abstracts, and descriptions<sup>40</sup> of every park's digital archives in the site. The results are summarized in table IV.2 and in Figure IV.2.

---

39 Switzerland is particularly well equipped in the fight for mitigation and adaptation to climatic changes throughout society as a whole. For more in depth information on this topic see the Federal strategy for climate change adaptation : <https://www.bafu.admin.ch/bafu/de/home/themen/klima/fachinformationen/anpassung-an-den-klimawandel/strategie-des-bundesrates-zur-anpassung-an-den-klimawandel-in-de.html>

40 In particular, the terms used were multilingual. The query of research focused on the terms “climate change”, “climate”, “klima”, “klimawandel”, “climat”, “environnement”, “réchauffement climatique”, “clima”, “cambiamento climatico”.

Table IV.2: climate and climate change research in Swiss Parks divided per typology of research. Data from Parkforschung.ch. Last update on 08-29-2018

Protected Area	Total research records	Research projects	Management-oriented projects	Permanent/Monitoring projects	Dissertations	Masters	Bachelors
Regional Nature Park Beverin	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Regional Nature Park Binnthal	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Regional Nature Park Biosfera Val Mustair	5	3	1	0	0	1	0
Regional Nature Park Chasseral	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Regional Nature Park Diemtigtal	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Regional Nature Park Doubs	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Regional Nature Park Ela	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Regional Nature Park Gantrisch	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Regional Nature Park Gruyère Pays-d'Enhaut	1	1	0	0	0	0	0
Regional Nature Park Jura Vaudois	1	1	0	0	0	0	0
Regional Nature Park Jurapark Aargau	1	0	0	0	0	0	0
Regional Nature Park Pfyn-Finges	1	0	0	0	1	0	0
Regional Nature Park Schaffhausen	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Regional Nature Park Thal	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Swiss Alps Jungfrau-Aletsch UNESCO World Heritage	3	0	0	0	0	2	1
Swiss National Park	13	4	0	3	2	4	0
Swiss Tectonic Arena Sardona UNESCO World Heritage	1	0	1	0	0	0	0
UNESCO Biosphere Entlebuch	3	2	0	0	0	1	0
UNESCO Engiadina Val Müstair	1	1	0	0	0	0	0
Wildnispark Zurich	1	1	0	0	0	0	0
<b>Total</b>	<b>30</b>	<b>13</b>	<b>2</b>	<b>3</b>	<b>3</b>	<b>8</b>	<b>1</b>



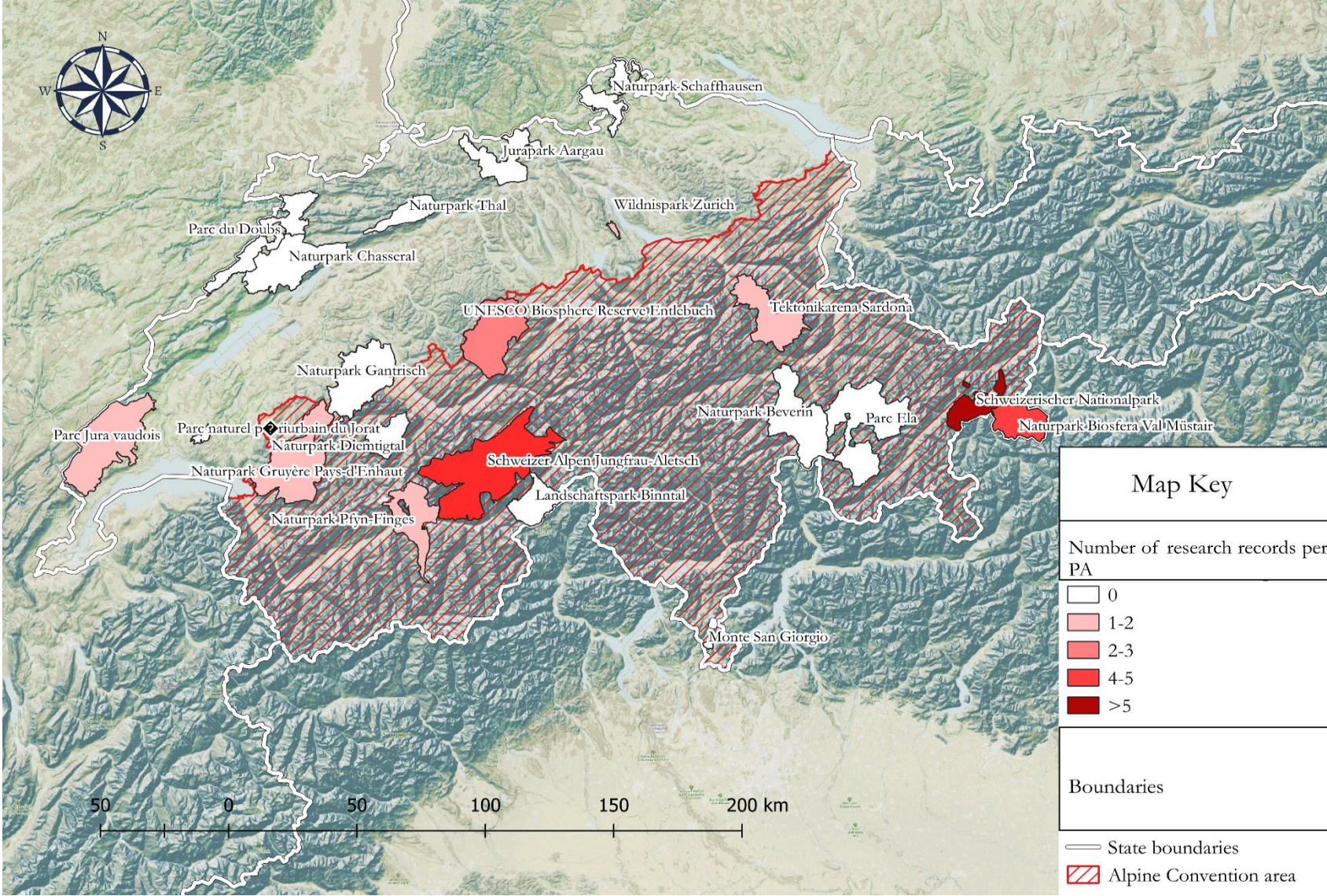


Figure IV.2 Climate Change research records filed in every PA. Data from Parkforschung.ch

It is apparent that climate change is not part of the core scientific interests of the protected areas, despite the high level of relevance that the scientific topic has gained on a national level<sup>41</sup>: nine of them do not show any sign of climate change research, and six of them display just one inquiry on the topic. By contrast the Swiss National Park and its surroundings – the Naturpark Biosfera Val Mustair and the UNESCO Biosphärenreservat Engiadina Val Mustair – form the main geographical cluster of research, defining a hotspot of research interest in our scientific question that gravitates around the work of the National Park. Breaking down the composition of research by typology, the Swiss National Park’s scientific production is almost equally divided between research projects and doctoral dissertations or master degree theses. Interestingly, of the 7 total research studies indexed, 3 are long-term monitoring programmes, the only exponents of this kind present in the whole database, probably the only sources of long climate data series that are a necessary condition in order to inquire about the evolution of climate at the scale of a protected area. Considering the whole protected areas system, there are 14 research projects: 8 masters theses, 3 doctoral dissertations, 2 management oriented projects and 1 bachelor's thesis. Given the particular distribution, it is difficult to make sense of the spatial pattern formed, and outside of the Swiss National Park cluster the data has little informative meaning and does not show definite trends, other than the means of monitoring, in binary fashion, the presence or absence of the topic among the research interests of the single protected area.

In this context of relative data scarcity, bibliographical and bibliometric analyses lose their explanatory power. As a matter of fact, these kinds of methodology are suitable for the analysis of data and very profitable in conditions of data richness, but the presence of a large body of information is the only sufficient and satisfactory condition to engage a problem with this framework. The methods employed so far are not fitted to carry the inquiry any further if we are to understand what the reasons, drivers, and constraints are of this particular geography of science. For this reason, the focus of the entire discussion shifts at this point from the products of science – counting and mapping articles and research projects – to the process of making science, speaking directly with the people involved in research and conservation projects, in order to understand which dynamics are involved in the making of scientific research, and how climate change is catching the interest.

---

<sup>41</sup> The relevance of climate science at policy level is best explained by the recent publication (2016) of a report published by the Swiss Academies of Sciences titled “*Coup de projecteur sur le climat Suisse. Etat des lieux et perspectives*”

## 2. THE EPISTEMIC COMMUNITY AND THE STRUCTURE OF EXPERTS INTERVIEWS

In order to shed light on this particular situation, a set of semi-structured interviews was organized between January and June 2018. The research design was informed by the notion of “epistemic community” defined as a “*group of professionals, often from a variety of different disciplines, which produce policy-relevant knowledge about complex technical issues*” (Haas 1992, p.16). This framework is intended not only as a way to overcome data scarcity but also as a means to understand how policy and management relevant knowledge is formed and interacts with members of the community. The notion of “epistemic community” is usually employed in the fields of science and technology studies (STS) and political ecology as a key to understanding how environmental information is formed and how it flows from science to policy domains, often highlighting how the naïve vision of a science straightforwardly informing policy cannot be empirically verified, and suggesting models of co-construction of both science and policy in the process of knowledge production (Kamelarczyk, Smith-Hall, 2014). Epistemic communities allow research in the geography of science to analyse not only the inner dynamics of the research community but also the relationship of the scientific communities with other groups of stakeholders.

If “*ideas would be sterile without carriers*” (Haas 1992, p.27), then policies, management measures, and scientific research – or the lack thereof – can be better understood in their complexity through adopting a variety of different actors’ standpoints. This claim proves especially true in the case of conservation, where communities are formed by an assemblage of scientists, practitioners, managers, and policymakers (Lorimer 2015). At this scale of observation, and with the contextual absence of a strong macroregional environmental policy regulating research and adaptation to climate change in protected areas, it is very difficult to understand how information flows between the domain of science and that of policy at a national scale, or lower. Despite this fact, protected areas still maintain their dimension of boundary objects, “*able to bound together local needs and national or international dimensions, as well as different social actors*” (Kamelarczyk, Smith-Hall, 2014; p. 21). A population belonging to different social worlds inhabits these objects, as scientists, local managers, and practitioners form a community that cannot be defined as strictly scientific, nor administrative, but are widely considered epistemic, as they share a substantial set of beliefs about the role of science as an informative force for the management of protected areas. As anticipated in chapter 2, parks and PAs can be understood as trading zones where the conservation community intercepts and reworks concepts coming from a different scientific and political community, namely the community of climate and climate change study and management.

Talking about an epistemic community is an efficient way of synthesizing the heterogeneity and making sense of the different worldviews that actors might present. However, it is worth noting that this label does not shed light on the actual dynamics that animate the community. As already highlighted by Patrick Kupper in his reconstruction of the birth and development of the Swiss National Park, the history of conservation cannot be analysed from a perspective of a pure history of scientific ideas, or, conversely, a material history made by different institutions working their way into the definition of the field of conservation as we know it today. Hence, the history of the Swiss National Park is analysed by Kupper as the history of the development of a network of different actors: from conservationists and park managers to scientists, from wardens to community leaders and journalists. The complexity of the landscape is even higher in Kupper's account, because of the necessity of taking account of the non-human actors as well: animals with their movement and their agency played a determinant role in the definition of the Park's history<sup>42</sup>. Moreover, scientific ideas were also an integral part of the network: the overarching idea of equilibrium ecology served both as a scientific framework and a target for the development of nature in the Park's grand project.

The same arguments hold true in contemporary conservation. Conservation as a social undertaking can be understood only by acknowledging the great diversity of human and nonhuman actors involved in the process. The discourse perpetrated by American nature journalists, as seen in section 2.4, touches scientists and conservationists, colliding ideas of a fixed and everchanging nature, the relationship between scientists and non-scientists, the role and behaviour of much-valued species in response to climatic changes, and is filtered through the lens of trained storytellers that become part of this network by promoting certain meanings and messages with their own writings, inside and outside the epistemic community. Hence, the goal of the following sections will be to analyse the constitutive components of the scientific discourse and its interaction with the management domains, starting from the particular geography of scientific information sources.

With the purpose of pursuing these goals, interviewees were partly selected with the help of two experts on the topic of research in protected areas in the Swiss Academy of Natural Science (ScNat)

---

<sup>42</sup> Kupper shows how some of the main struggles in the management of the park were caused by maintenance of the boundaries. Boundaries might have been an effective tool in order to realize the utopic "boundary object", keeping out poachers and adverse land uses, but their effectiveness did not apply perfectly to animals. It was the biopolitics implied in deciding which species should live inside the boundaries and which outside, and the maintaining of this order, that created trouble for the Park. The author stretches the importance of the role played by some charismatic species, especially the Ibex. The Ibex, absent at the beginning on the land of the park, was at the centre of different attempt to establish a population in the protected area. The attempts made were not always successful, because the ability of the ibex communities to move and chose their *umwelt* undermined the efforts made by managers and scientists to create spaces where they could live and thrive (Kupper, 2014).

and then joined lately by other experts suggested by the first initial group, in a *snowball* selection process. For the task of analysing the data, the whole body of interviews was divided into four groups (table 4.3): scientists currently (or in the recent past) conducting a research project on climate change in protected areas (1), research coordinators or members of a research council (2), conservationists or administrative managers (3), and external social or natural scientists with particular perspective and expertise on the issue addressed (4). The interviewees' group, name, and working institution are reported in table 4.3

Table IV.3 Interviewees divided by name, group, function carried, area of expertise and institution

Name of the interviewee	Group	Stakeholder group by function	Area of expertise and knowledge	Organization
Laudo Albrecht	3	Conservationist	PA's administration	ProNatura
Bruno Baur	1	Scientist directly involved in climate change research	Ecology	University of Basel
Alice Brambilla	1	Scientist directly involved in climate change research	Ecology	University of Zurich
Matthias Buergi	4	Expert on wider topics connected to climate change	Landscape Ecology	WSL
Thomas Hammer	1	Scientist directly involved in climate change research	Geography	University of Bern
Felix Kienast	4	Expert on wider topics connected to climate change	Landscape Ecology	WSL
Florian Knaus	2	Research coordinator	Research coordination	UNESCO Biosphere Entlebuch
Christoph Kull	4	Expert on wider topics connected to climate change	Climatology	ProClim
Patrick Kupper	4	Expert on wider topics connected to climate change	Environmental History	University of Innsbruck
Thomas Scheurer	2	Member of research	Research	Iscar, Swiss National

		council	coordination	Park
Stefanie Von Fumetti	1	Scientist directly involved in climate change research	Ecology	University of Basel

The interviews were designed and carried out between January 2018 and September 2018. Given the diversity of the expertise involved in the interviews, the topic addressed changed slightly from one interview to another, in order to cover the majority of topics related to the issue of climate change in protected areas. Because of the heterogeneity of the topics discussed during the interviews, the data have been aggregated in several sections. The first section is exclusively dedicated to the analysis of climate research in the Swiss National Park, taken as an example of how a geographical hotspot of research can be generated. The following section describes the main obstacles toward a development of a research focus on climate change, aggregates all the opinions and perspective on the particular distribution of research projects, historical research studies, and monitoring initiatives, and is divided into two subdomains. The first will address obstacles lying at the interface between science and management that impede the development of research projects, while the second will focus on the purely scientific factors that slow down research. A third section will analyse possible ways of fostering climate change research, starting from the capability of international research projects to boost the economic and scientific interest around climate change inquiry. Finally, the last part of the analysis will consider the main reasons why some highly common climate change research topics in the field of climate research are not found in the research agendas of the PAs and why they have potential to become new catalysts for scientific interest in Swiss PAs. The final section will summarize the data and highlight some of the main features of the geographical scientific region emerging from the representation given by the community members.

### 3. UNPACKING THE CLUSTER: THE SWISS NATIONAL PARK AS A SCIENTIFIC HUB FOR CLIMATE CHANGE MONITORING

It is probably counter-intuitive to start with the exception to the general rule in order to analyse the factors shaping the particular geographical distribution, but the isolation of the different factors allowing the Swiss National Park to evade the trend is probably the most effective way to make sense of the whole body of qualitative data gathered through the interviews, as well as to understand the effects that the absence of these factors plays elsewhere in the country. The PA historically displays its own distinct research concept, which makes the Park, on an international level, one of a kind. As

already noted in the previous chapters, the Swiss National Park is first and foremost a space – and actually a place – for science. The primacy of scientific research allows the National Park to be an ideal context in which to study the full development of climate change effects, not just in relation to a particular ecosystem, species or disturbance but covering the entire spectrum of the possible changes that ecosystems might face in consequence of climatic alterations. Climate change is not a threat for the park, but rather an occasion to study climate change ecological dynamics in a secluded environment. In Thomas Scheurer’s words:

1. *The SNP offers the best opportunities to study climate change effects, as natural processes are not influenced or managed in the Park. In this regard, climate change is a “neutral” external driver of natural processes and “observed” by research. Strict protection as an ideal laboratory! In this perspective, climate change does not affect conservation. If species are extinct in the Park due to climate change, this has to be accepted, if new species migrate into the Park, this has to be accepted. (Scheurer)*

In the Swiss National Park, the scientific and the management perspectives merge into one another. Science is not an instrument but the goal of the entire conservation paradigm. The dimension of the open-air laboratory, an evergreen metaphor that describes the Park from its foundation, is playing again, more than one hundred years later, a fundamental role. However, as pointed out by environmental historian Patrick Kupper, the fundamental scientific conception of nature has changed and is more open-ended, embracing more tightly the sometimes unforeseeable effects of climate change:

2. *Two weeks ago I took part in a radio interview [and was asked] about how climate change affects protected areas and the management policies of National Parks in particular. My answer is that it depends on what you are protecting, what are your goals. If the goal is always protecting natural processes, and that is indeed what they did in SNP from the beginning, there are no substantial changes. What changed really is the idea of a natural equilibrium that was the original target of the Park. Basically now they still want to understand processes while not disturbed by humans, but it is a more open-ended process. In the past [in the case of SNP], scientists got kind of frustrated because nothing happened: changes were so slow they needed years and years and years just to actually see small shifts. Probably with climate change it will be faster. (Kupper)*

The particular research and management concept of the National Park represents an ideal setting for monitoring the effects of climate change, without any possible interfering interest other than science:

3. *It is possible that a political discussion can lead to management measures, if surroundings or infrastructures are threatened, e.g. regarding natural forest fire or debris flows. (Scheurer)*

Even if the primacy of science came to know some forms of constraint in the past, and could face some more of them in the future, the special attention given to science by the Park's administration allows the flourishing of different climate change monitoring initiatives. In this context, different scientific disciplines, untied from any administrative constraints, frequently find interest in observing the unraveling of climate change and its effects on the ecosystems.

4. *Climate change issues are at the top of relevance, together with the evolution of wildlife. Most of the disciplines work on topics related to climate change. Research provides a large range of facts concerning effects of climate change. Most of the research profits from earlier studies, like resurvey studies on snakes, butterflies, macroinvertebrates, summit plants, millipedes, etc. On the other hand, there is no concerted research programme on climate change effects in the Park and its ecosystems. (Scheurer,)*

It is of capital importance to highlight the fact that the deep historical roots of the parks have a direct and positive influence on the possibilities of inquiry. In fact, in virtue of the abundance of historical scientific observations, the National Park is in a position to study climate change effectively with a methodology that would be unsuitable anywhere else, namely, the repetition of earlier surveys on the distribution of plants and animals. These kinds of study, focusing on mapping range shifts or contractions, have been extensively used in scientific literature to assess the impact of climate change on ecosystems' species composition (Parmesan, 2006), and the possibility of repeating them in a context undisturbed by human activities – a condition that enables the researcher to exclude other independent variables from the observation.

5. *There are many studies that document an effect of climate change on specific habitats or species. Most of such research projects are related to long-term monitoring and research or resurvey of old data samplings (Scheurer)*

The practice of resurvey of old data samplings sheds light on one of the main scientific needs in climate change research, namely, historical data series. The availability of previous observations can play a strong role in shaping the geography of scientific inquiries by allowing comparative practices. These kinds of consideration will be further developed in the next sections.

Another important enabling factor is the internationality of research monitoring undertakings. From an international cooperation standpoint, the Swiss National Park signals substantial involvement in a wider network of research, reunited around particular objects of observation. The PA is, in fact, a fundamental part of wide international monitoring networks focusing on climate change's effects, as in the case of the GLORIA programme, and GLOCHAMOST. Additionally, interviewees highlight that



the park is in contact with other, smaller regional geographical networks of ecologic monitoring, such as *Lacs sentinelles* or *Spring Monitoring*<sup>43</sup> and is an integral part of wildlife monitoring programmes that can be instrumental in climate change impacts assessments. However, when asked about the centrality of the role that will be played in the near future by the international network in the creation of scientific interest in climate change, Thomas Scheurer raised a significative consideration:

6. *Such projects have to be designed in a way they can initiate research, as GLORIA. In the SNP a couple of projects are related to the GLORIA approach, focusing on different aspects that are not covered by GLORIA, as thermal variations, decomposition of organic materials, etc. (Scheurer)*

The mere embeddedness of a PA in a wider network does not constitute a necessary and satisfactory condition. In order to develop scientific interest around the topic of climate change, these wide projects have to stimulate new research, able to undertake related phenomena and gain impetus from the original research project. This claim resonates with the wider hypothesis described in chapter 3 on *umbrella researches* and their role in the promotion of climate change research projects. The context of the SNP obviously represents a very fertile ground for the multiplication of research on the topic, since the entire National Park is devoted to scientific inquiry and there is no substantial obstacle or higher priority to follow. However, despite the growth in scientific projects aiming at observing some effects of the changing climate, there is no sign yet of a concerted research programme on the subject of climate change.

## 4. THE BOUNDARIES OF CLIMATE CHANGE RESEARCH

### 4.1 SOME OBSTACLES AT THE SCIENCE-MANAGEMENT INTERFACE

Starting from the first concrete evidence gathered in the data analysis, the question of the scarcity of records of climate change research is obviously central. The low density of data has to be explained by considering the parks' attitude towards the increase in climate change phenomena. With the notable exception of the Swiss National Park, interviewees agreed with the claim that Swiss PAs tend to be reactive rather than proactive in their behaviour towards climate change monitoring, since projects on climate monitoring are still to be developed. From the analysis of the few data available, a hypothesis

---

<sup>43</sup> As remarked in chapter 3, this research network is not operating yet, but it is uniting researchers and scientific materials from different geographical realities as a starting point

has been expressed. If climate change does not alter – or at least threaten to do so – some of the conservation objects or goals of the single PA or meet the interests of a particular research concept, a dedicated research focus is not taken into consideration. The latter claim, already analysed, is best described by the case of the Swiss National Park. Conversely, the first hypothesis could be helpful in explaining the particular geographical pattern outside the cluster centred around the National Park. Whenever a particular object of interest for a PA could be endangered by climatic changes, scientific interest can be triggered. The case of ProNatura’s reserve of the Aletsch epitomizes this distinctive attitude. This well-known NGO is the most important non-governmental actor involved in nature conservation, and is the owner of 700 reserves nationwide (<https://www.pronatura.ch/fr/decouvrir-des-reserves-naturelles>) as well as hosting visitors in two centres set up for the purpose of nurturing environmental awareness. The NGO's entire mission is directed around the need to conserve nature and integrate governmental efforts to increase the total surface of protected areas. Narrowing the focus on one of its reserves, the case of the Aletschwald poses an interesting perspective for testing the centrality of climate change considerations in conservation discourse. This area, which is a part of the bigger “Aletscharena”, hosts one of the two visitor centres managed by the organization, and, given its geographical position, holds a favoured view of one of the most dramatic and best known cases of glacial retreat, that of the longest glacier of the Alpine range, the Aletsch. Moreover, the NGO manages the neighbouring forest, the Aletschwald, home of some of the oldest trees in Switzerland, all of the microthermal species *Pinus cembra*. The small region is full of natural elements potentially touched by climate change, also in a harmful way. In order to understand what degree of centrality climate change has in the mind of the administration, an interview with the director of the local ProNatura Centre of Villa Cassel, Laudo Albrecht, was set in place.

In the words of the director of the ProNatura’s centre in the Aletsch region, Laudo Albrecht:

7. *We cannot say we have precise observations or scientific results of changing because of climate change (Albrecht)*

Nevertheless, Albrecht claims to have at least some empirical observations – not scientific evidence coming from structured research programmes – about changes in some of the distinctive aspects of the area:

8. *We have the Black Grouse (Tetrao tetrix) and Rock Ptarmigan (Lagopus mutus) which are here in this region. We can observe the tendency of the Tetrao of going higher, and also the Lagopus mutus is going higher. Then you have here the Great Aletsch Glacier, and here we have the end [of the glacier] but in 1860 the end of the glacier was here [points to a higher spot on the map]. So you can see the glacier going back and back and back. This is normal, but the speed of the retreat is something new, and it is getting faster and faster. We*

*think this is a very good evidence of climatic changes. This is one thing. And then the other thing you see now you have problems of stability [of the slopes]. On this side, you can see the glacier and on the other the Aletschwald. The glacier is retreating and so the slopes became unstable, so you have landslides. In 2016, two years ago, we saw in this region a faster retreat: 80 cm per day. This retreat will have consequences on the whole landscape and on the PA. We think this is also related to climate change. With the retreating of the glacier, the slopes became unstable. We had to install sustaining structures against the instability of the slopes to protect our own structures. I think this installation and the retreat of the glacier are the most visible signs of climate change.* (Albrecht)

The empirical observations listed by Albrecht extend to many topics widely addressed in the scientific literature: from glacial retreats and related slopes' instability to species' range shift. Nevertheless, when asked about the capacity and the willingness of the PA actively to face these changes, in particular regarding the possible changing in the species' composition of the prized forest, Albrecht analysed the threats posed by climate change at the moment as follows:

9. *I don't think we are going to see significant changes in the next twenty-thirty years. Not only the temperature is important, but also how much snow and rain you have in the summer, how long is the winter, all the factors that are important for the trees, not only temperature. Normally we can see when you have risings in temperatures – three degrees or five as extreme temperatures – I think that we will have influences on the trees. Perhaps we will have more Picea, but Arolla pine and Larix decidua will stay here. In the higher zones we don't have many trees at the moment, but probably forest will rise higher. But again, no scientific results, it is just a guess.* (Albrecht)

Climate change is not perceived as a possible threat to species composition in a mid-term future. The arrival of new species – or at least the population growth of some species different from the most valued ones – is not seen as a real threat either for the ecology or for the iconicity of the forest. Moreover, when asked about the possibility of an investigation on the changing of the populations in the forest, the interviewee responded as follows:

10. *We have some scientific material concerning the forest. This forest is 2000 m above sea level and processes are happening very very slowly. Every 20 or 30 years we make an inventory, counting the trees. But this time span is almost irrelevant for such a forest, which is thousands of years old. So it needs a very long time to see changes.* (Albrecht)

In other words, changes are expected, but the pace will be slow. It is safe to assume that changes in the species composition do not constitute at the moment a threat for the PA, since they are not showing direct influence on the valued species, but just minor effects on some population dynamics.

11. *Not concerning the diversity of the species, not at the moment. When you speak with experts, probably they will be focused on the future scenarios and might have some concerns. It would be normal that with higher temperatures you can have new plants coming in the areas, but we have no evidence now. [...] We can see changes, but not related to climate change. I can't say there are no changes [due to climate change], but we just cannot see them right now. (Albrecht)*

In such conditions, the possibility of having an effective policy can easily be perceived as problematic.

12. *It is impossible to have one, we don't know what is coming. We have to observe the development and then decide at the moment. (Albrecht)*

In addition, a set of questions regarding tourist behaviour regarding the effects of climate change and the environmental education activities organized by the PA was addressed. The final goal was twofold. The first aim was to understand how much the physical and ecological dynamics triggered by climate change are perceived and known by the general public visiting the PA, and secondly, this topic was instrumental in understanding the PA's degree of investment in the topic of climate change on an educational level.

13. *It is very difficult to say because we don't have any study on tourist behaviour. I can't say precisely why they are coming to visit the region. We have – and I can't claim to be scientific – the impression that there are a lot of people coming to see the Aletsch glacier while it is still here. I think visitors are generally more aware of nature protection and so on. However, when I look at the whole region called “Aletsch Arena”, then I don't think climate change is an important reason for interest in the region. The people coming to visit us [the ProNatura Centre] are more aware; perhaps these events are making other people more sensitive to climate change and the things which can happen, but I don't think they are already. When we have people here we have many school classes coming to camps. They stay from Monday to Friday, with guided excursions: for example, when we have excursions on the Aletsch Glacier we have discussions about climate change and how can we see climate change through the glacier, what are the reasons of climate change and so on, but people in the neighbouring villages are just coming for holidays. This is not something you discuss during holidays. For the people who are coming to our centre, we have discussions aimed to make them more aware of the problem. But we only have a small part of the visitors of the Aletsch Arena. In addition, our tours are not just focused on climate change, but also on the natural beauty of the region in general. (Albrecht)*

From the evidence gathered by this point, it is legitimate to see climate change as a problem lurking in the background, very present in science communication programmes and currently at the centre of attention from the PA's administration, but for some scientific and management reasons scientific research aimed at gathering evidence of changes and forecasting future scenarios as a guideline for managing the PAs is not taking place. The purely scientific reasons will be addressed in the next section, focused on groups 1 and 2 of interviewees. From a management standpoint, the topic is complex, but as a first hypothesis, it is possible to state that climate change is not scientifically analysed here because it does not directly touch any object of strict interest for the PA. In this case, the PA's protection responsibilities are centred around the forest, and do not comprise the glacier. The main goal at this point is to find examples of damage or substantial change to some core conservation interest of one PA that can act as the spark that ignites interest toward the topic. The problem of the landslides might be an ideal entry point for scientific research in the area of the Aletschwald, but the hypothesis cannot be tested empirically.

An interesting benchmark to test this hypothesis is the research project on moorlands and climate change (*Moorhabitats der UNESCO Biosphäre Entlebuch im Wandel des Klimas*) developed in the UNESCO biosphere reserve Entlebuch, which is able to shed light on the great complexity lying behind this simple relationship. Moorlands are at the centre of different research and management initiatives at the European scale, both for ecological reasons and the carbon sink functions they can perform<sup>44</sup>, but are also climate-sensitive ecosystems. On a Swiss scale, moorlands are constitutionally protected ecosystems, defining a unicum in Europe and the Entlebuch represents the territorial unit hosting the highest number of moorlands in the whole country, with a surface of almost 2000 Ha<sup>45</sup>. As a matter of fact, moorlands are rare and valued ecosystems that might be an ideal candidate as an attention catalyst around the topic of climate change, and – coherently with the hypothesis – are at the centre of a research initiative.

The research project is led by Thomas Hammer, professor of Geography at the University of Bern, and has resulted in a publication not indexed in the Web of Science. When asked about the main features of

---

44 The Moorlands Indicators of Climate Change Initiative (MICCI) is probably the best example of the role played by such habitats in climate change research and environmental discourse creation ([www.nationalparks.gov.uk/students/micci-project](http://www.nationalparks.gov.uk/students/micci-project)). The project, UK-wide, has been developed to give secondary school students the opportunity to take part in real world climate science, and is based on National Parks as monitoring sites. It was used as a benchmark during the interviews addressing the moorlands as the centre of discussion.

45 The source of information regarding the total surface of protected moorlands is the official website of the UNESCO biosphere: <http://www.biosphaere.ch/de/natur-landschaft/moore>

the Swiss moorlands, and especially Entlebuch's, Hammer described a scientific and managerial situation slightly different from the one that might be envisioned following the lines drawn by the international discourse:

14. *Climate change will harm those residual landscapes that are very peripheral and not quite as iconic as Scottish moorlands or German moorlands. They have a value as near natural-cultural landscape, but they are really small in size and don't count as an important carbon sink. These are residual landscapes, since 90% of them are gone, and are conserved most of all for aesthetic and ecological reasons. Only a part of moorland landscape is made by high mires, that are important records of environmental change. In relation to climate change, they will be affected in their ecological equilibrium.* (Hammer)

It is apparent that the international discourse on moorlands as carbon sinks has no gravitational pull on Swiss moorland conservation, which does not align with the more famous examples of Scotland or Germany. The local conservation of moorland habitats follows its own path<sup>46</sup> and has its own distinctive rationale. Nevertheless, the ecosystem is highly valued and the threats posed by climate change have become a matter of research concern. Despite this fact, Hammer reports the substantial lack of cooperation between science and policy in relation to the topic of the effects that climate change might have on the conservation status of the moorlands, suggesting their lack of iconic dimension and geographical extension as possible explanations:

15. *There is no general discourse around the moorlands, despite their status of protection. I am surprised too since they are nationally protected. There is no important discussion going on, either in science or in society. It is a surprising thing. The high mires are few and small in size, while the flat mires are more extensive, but without the same value. Probably their extension and rarity, combined with their low iconic value, make them neglected in some way. Of course, we have the Alps as a categorical landscape. I think we have no perception that this typical landscape exists in Switzerland. The Alps are extensive and always in the centre of the discussion about the landscape. We are far from the situation of Germany or Scotland, where moorlands are recognized as beautiful and iconic landscapes.* (Hammer)

It appears that moorlands have the capacity of summoning scientific interest around their potential changes in response to climate change, but due to a fundamental lack of iconic value, neither science

---

<sup>46</sup> Moorlands conservation in Switzerland is a practice deeply rooted in history, starting from the Rothenthurm Initiative, a legal framework created to protect the upland moor of Rothenthurm and also other moors scattered through the whole country. This moorland area provides a habitat for many species that are threatened with extinction.

nor society are particularly keen on a close analysis; hence the topic is prevented from becoming the centre of a robust scientific effort.

In order to understand better the research and management dynamics underlying the lack of a stronger interest, an additional interview was set up, this time with the coordinator of research in the UNESCO Biosphere Entlebuch, Florian Knaus. The topic of the moorlands was addressed alongside more general considerations on the management constraints that limit the development of research on the wide topic of climate change. On the situation involving moorlands, he helped to explain some of the issues raised by Hammer, and listed some of the main obstacles management has to face in order to realize effective monitoring programmes. Regarding the topic of climate change, the discussion was rooted in the substantial absence of climate change in the monitoring system:

16. *It isn't a topic that has been much investigated. There was an additional [in respect to Hammer's research] student research on climate change and wetlands, but it was something really small. [...] We are trying to make the monitoring initiatives more systematic. We haven't really included monitoring aspects specifically related to climate change, but we have two climate stations here in the Entlebuch. We are collecting data also from the river, so we could have data on the runoff. But that's it. We would be generally interested, but it's a matter of finances whether and how climate change could be monitored by us. (Knaus)*

The allocation of scarce economic resources is obviously a matter of urgency in the need for investment, and at the moment the Biosphere has no particular need for this kind of inquiry in order to strengthen decision making related to climate change.

17. *Entlebuch is a region with extremely high precipitation. Let's say that if the temperature goes a little bit up and rainfall goes a little bit down, this is not particularly bad. It is a region with extremes. If precipitations during the summer decrease – and this is what is expected – that doesn't have an extreme effect in terms of how the landscape will change [...] We had bigger issues with landslides from heavy precipitation for example. If this increases, it would be more problematic, that would make us think more about climate change. Precipitation in summer and higher temperatures are not a problem. One topic that was particularly popular was linked with bark beetle infestations in summers, but it is not so much of a topic any more. Forest management has to change in a way that is more efficient and relies more on tree species that are not affected by bark beetles. This has already been implemented starting about 10 years ago. (Knaus)*

The particular geography and climatic envelope of the Entlebuch make the area resistant to possible changes, and no adaptation strategy is needed. Hence, it is plausible for efforts and resources to be

directed towards different scientific projects. Nevertheless, the question regarding moorlands is still extant at this point, given their special status of protection and potential for climate-driven changes.

18. *Something we are not sure of is how peatlands are influenced by climate change. We have seen in extreme dry summers of the past few years that they are dry and there might be changes, but we don't know how, we don't have monitoring there.<sup>47</sup> Generally, we can say it is not a huge issue yet, but it can be problematic if peatlands run dry in summer, there might be additional CO<sub>2</sub> issues. (Knaus)*

At this point we can already understand more clearly why the effects of climate change on moorlands are not addressed by other research projects: the effects of climate on the moorland ecosystem are still uncertain. It is clear that a situation of relative ignorance on some ecological processes will be seen from a PA as an opportunity of scientific inquiry, but this might be undertaken only if based on monitoring systems. Hence, it is now necessary to update the original hypothesis. PAs start research projects on climate change if the phenomenon already influences some of its core conservation objects and the PA has the capabilities to monitor climatic and ecological evolutions over time.

Addressing the question of the possible problems that the future climate might hold for moorland conservation and carbon sink properties, Knaus aligned himself with the general international discourse surrounding moorlands, acknowledging the possibility of changes in the carbon retention capacity. In addition, and on a very practical level, he cites the Entlebuch's natural heritage feature and its connections to some works by external institutions that might prove useful in addressing future issues. In a way, this can be regarded as a testament of the management and research sectors' awareness of the latent potential of climate change phenomena:

19. *We don't have the only cluster but we have a specially high density of peatlands and this is just a fraction of the original distribution. What we know is that 80% of the intact raised bogs of Switzerland are in our region. We have not yet approached the theme of the CO<sub>2</sub> sequestration, i.e. how much CO<sub>2</sub> is sequestered in peatlands in the biosphere reserve. There is a woman in charge at WSL who is working on standards to calculate carbon balance for restoration projects and cooperate with a compensation company. They set a standard in which they calculate how much money to invest in restoration. We are in contact with them. We have plans to put the question in place. When you do a restoration and climate change is starting to be more severe, even more than expected, in summers when the overall precipitation is lower than the mean, it could be a problem to keep this vegetation in place. (Knaus)*

---

<sup>47</sup> In a later communication, Knaus states that a Master Thesis will be finished on this topic by the end of the year.



In the end, with regard to the possibility of bringing together the international discourse around climate change adaptation and mitigation and the local needs of the PA, Knaus raised an interesting observation.

20. *These peatlands are 80% or 90% privately owned. If climate change exerts such pressure that there are real money allocations towards CO<sup>2</sup> sequestration – these peatlands are carbon sinks – and we find a mechanism to allocate money to the people who own the lands, there will be a chance. I think that there is potential to bring these two levels closer. Here [points at the map] the greenish and yellowish parts are areas where the land is used, but it is a nature conservation kind of use, sustained with subsidies. In that case, the land still has a value for them. The blueprint is here, but it is not related at the moment to any CO<sup>2</sup> sequestration initiative. There is a good chance these [CO<sup>2</sup> sequestration initiatives] will have an influence on land use in the future, but not at all at the moment because currently there are no CO<sup>2</sup>-payment-schemes. (Knaus)*

This particular claim reveals the complexity of the relationships between science and management. Noting the lack of climate change research among the most common research topics in Swiss protected areas is unavoidably linked with the absence of management actions undertaking adaptation to climate change at the PA level. The relative lack of research projects is matched by an absence at the policy level, identified with the contingency of the lack of CO<sup>2</sup> payment schemes, and this impedes, in turn, the presence of management actions or guidelines for action. The interest around a particular topic might take different forms, from political to scientific, but its different manifestations are seldom to be taken independently. Whereas the parallelism might be self-evident, the difficult task is to understand the mechanism of influence between the two spheres. It is true that the presence of a scheme of payment for CO<sup>2</sup> sequestration services might have triggered scientific interest around the topic and in turn on moorlands ecosystems, but it is also true that an opposite mechanism might be realistic, where the birth of scientific interest could lead to new understandings that inform policy and management, triggering interest in different domains than science. It is a very demanding task to understand the main direction of the influence between these spheres, but it is nonetheless important to note their strict intertwining and the feedback mechanisms underlying this relationship.

Following the same line of inquiry, the discussion was taken from the particular to the general, searching for other possible explanations or integrations to the original hypothesis. Agreeing on the validity of the initial hypothesis, Knaus added some remarks on the concrete possibility of intervening effectively by the PA as an important factor in the scientific and management attitude:

21. *Also to consider is the concrete possibility of doing something about it [a hypothetical change]. The Aletsch glacier is retreating anyway, there is nothing you can do. But if you have species conservation problems or*

*problems with the trails where people cannot walk any more, then you start being active. For instance, we actually have references to climate change in our research concept, but we have just never done anything specifically to research it. (Knaus)*

The possibility of materially doing something in response to changes is seen as a determinant factor in the formation of interest from the point of view of the management and, consequently, in potential scientific inquiries. Moreover, in the particular case of the Entlebuch's moorlands, Knaus highlights again that even the research projects already undertaken have struggled to find definite answers. Hence, possible management interventions are left without guidance.

22. *It is true that there is some kind of a gap. We have been approached a few times from people wanting to do something about climate change, like projects on how potentially peatlands can change when climate change stresses them. This is something you can ask yourself but nobody has an answer. Thomas Hammer's group of students, in the end, had to ask an expert who had no answer to give. I find it interesting because the only thing you can really do is adaptation. Of course, we can contribute by conserving our peatlands, but this is something we already want to do [independently from climate change] and we have side effects of helping a bit with CO<sup>2</sup> sequestration, but you know, these few hectares won't save the world. From a conservation point of view, the only thing you can do is approach it intergenerationally. You restore the peatlands and you make sure you have done what you could have done. (Knaus)*

These insider's perspectives on the problem of monitoring and addressing climate change issues in PAs effectively portray the main issues that are preventing the formation of a strong interest from the management domain. Climate change might be seen as a difficult research field for protected areas for reasons of conflicting interest in other topics, perceived as more urgent. This might change only if the alteration of some climatic parameters shows direct influence on an object – a species, biotope, ecosystem or landmark – that is part of the core conservation interests of the PA. However, the detection of these kinds of ecological or biophysical transformations can be far from granted, especially in the absence of monitoring structures and programmes. Even if fulfilling all these pragmatic constraints, the actual possibility of intervening and influencing the phenomenon under consideration plays a role, as some PAs may allocate funds and workforce elsewhere, especially to research projects capable of actively informing conservation practices.

These issues might be related to the broader communication struggle that climate science faces in effectively translating some of its main scientific perspectives and instruments to the policy and management spheres. To verify the central hypothesis and its relatedness with more general trends, a

discussion with ProClim's deputy director Christoph Kull<sup>48</sup> was set in place. As first, Kull pointed to a fundamental issue: Parks and PAs, in general, are heterogeneous objects, with different goals and priorities.

23. *You have correctly said that this question is important in the Swiss National Park. You must know that the other projects of the Swiss parks are, in my view, the results of an economic-political demand. The work "park" is full of different interests. I believe that actors such as ProNatura or other NGOs have an important function in putting these demands within the parks' agendas. It seems to me that the structures are organized around economic facts: the interests of the population and above all economic interests, and the environmental interest may then arise later. (Kull)*

In Kull's view, environment conservation is just one of many processes that the parks should promote, and probably not the first-ranked for importance. This claim is in line with the previous consideration expressed by Florian Knaus, stating that local populations and steering committees sometimes saw in nature conservation an obstacle in their way to development. Nature conservation, even if an integral part of every PA's official goal, might be overshadowed by different interests. By the same token, research on the possible impact of climate change might be slowed down by the need to address socio-economic problems. Discussing the main problems highlighted by the previous interviewees, Kull recognized some common traits between this particular case and one of the more general difficulties that climate science is facing in the task of structuring robust communication with society in the Swiss context. In particular, he stresses the need to communicate climate change as a problem to address in the present, rather than in the future.

24. *[What you are citing] is a problem involving all of society. Switzerland is very organized and starting to change something is difficult. The response that you are quoting to me is typical, because a change is only possible if there are agreements. There is a need to feel that something really would change. These are weighty organizations, difficult to change. I have discussed the fact with Thomas (Scheurer) that it would be good to have structures that were able to adapt, to find new possibilities. But in the end the capillary organization really makes it difficult to change anything. (Kull)*

---

48 ProClim- is a forum for climate and global change issues, which seeks to facilitate both integrated research activities and the necessary linkages among scientists, policy makers and the public at home and abroad. Based in the Swiss Academy of Science (ScNat) its mission is to actively promote interdisciplinary scientific collaboration, to assist with the development of coordinated research projects, to ensure links with international global change programs and to facilitate the exchange of information on global change science within Switzerland

([http://4dweb.proclim.ch/4DCGI/proclim/en/Detail\\_Program?proclim-](http://4dweb.proclim.ch/4DCGI/proclim/en/Detail_Program?proclim-))

The task of effectively spreading the concept of uncertainty, a key feature of climate science, has proven difficult to accomplish:

25. *This is something which we have been trying to do for ten years, to communicate the notion of uncertainty. It's a difficult concept to communicate even in scientific circles. We have a discussion group that organizes meetings three or four times a year in which we speak of the current themes in this context. But uncertainty is really difficult to communicate. In the end it seems to me that in Switzerland the weight of the organizations makes everything difficult: everything works so well, why change it? This sense of inertia is strong and it is difficult to communicate the need for flexibility.* (Kull)

Kull sees in heavy structures like PAs non flexible-objects, which are difficult to connect to ideas of uncertainty. These difficulties might have a direct effect on research, since climate change science is based on future projections, with their margin of errors and different scenarios that need to be addressed with flexibility. Combining this need with the point raised by Knaus on the necessity or at least the possibility of actually doing something in order to cope with the changes, one can easily have a sense of the perceived difficulties of the implementation of climate adaptation and even monitoring. Additionally, the question of the availability of the monitoring structure was raised, given the fact that it was originally established for different purposes.

26. *The infrastructure developed according to a different thinking. The first places for gathering data were in the mountains, in the St Gotthard or the St Bernard. The discussions on new observation points came from private companies who exerted pressure for the meteorological network to be widened. I don't think this discussion [on climate and the ecological change network] ever entered into the network planning. The network was built on the basis of indications of population. The network exists, but it was born in a different context [...] I think that in the mountain above all, however, it will need to be developed, however.* (Kull)

In general, even if – as highlighted at the beginning of the chapter – climate science accounts for a high degree of policy-relevance on a national scale, communication between climate experts and different branches of society is not necessarily smooth.

27. *It is clear that climate change is there, just as are the effects that come at a cost. There are questions, but we don't yet know what is the best response, also on the political level. For many people the best response is to do nothing.* (Kull)

Kull confirmed the central hypothesis and embedded it in a more general overview of the difficulties in conducting and communicating climate science to different administrations, even in Switzerland, where climate science has already reached a high level of policy relevance.

However, a last step towards the confirmation of the hypothesis took the direction of the ecological evidence supporting the need of climate-related studies. On this topic, interviewees from both the management and science domains showed a reasonable degree of agreement around the need of gathering more information describing the effects of climate change on ecosystems in order to undertake any adaptation measures. Moreover, it has been highlighted explicitly how a more precise body of scientific information would be crucial in order to understand better how climate change can affect not only the composition, but also the structures and functions of ecosystems.

28. *These [ecological processes] are very slow processes. Just the migration of some species does not indicate that ecosystems are changing. We have to be careful in the interpretations of climate-induced changes. What we need are analysing climate-related changes in different “segments” of ecosystems: soil, air, water, forest, grassland, etc. It is to these days not evident, if evolution has the same direction in all “segments”. Exposition or block dumps can offer retreats for arctic species even if temperatures are increasing. In this regard, mountain ecosystems are very resilient to climate change. (Scheurer)*

As mentioned earlier, there is no evidence available demonstrating substantial influences of climate change on the ecosystem’s structure and function; hence it is crucial to stimulate new basic research on these topics, in order to enhance the capability of detecting actual threats to ecosystems deemed worthy of legal protection. Another interviewee belonging to group 1, Stefanie Von Fumetti, researcher at the University of Basel and part of the nascent spring monitoring network, aligned herself with the position expressed by Scheurer on the absence – and necessity – of data regarding ecosystems’ response to climate change, but also of basic research on the functioning of ecosystems:

29. *I think for scientists climate change is great, there a lot of things to research (...) We need more research on structure and functions. We need to understand how food webs function, how they may change if some parts of the food webs vanish or become less, food availability changes and so on. We need first to know how it works now in order to project it in the future. (Von Fumetti)*

In order to deepen our understanding of this last points, an interview with ecosystem specialist Bruno Baur, from the University of Basel, has been organized. Baur explained in details what are the obstacles towards the formation of research on the impacts on ecosystems’ structure and function.

30. *There are various studies going on climate change affecting ecosystem functioning. This is a rather complicated question. You might have direct and indirect effects. For example, cc allows a better development of invasive species. In the past, when we had cold winter, it peeled many invasive species. We have now warmer winters and*

*invasive can develop better. The problem is serious and depending strictly to climate change. In my group we are finalizing a study on Himalayan balsam: where the species occur you have half of the root biomass in the soil. Root biomass is directly or inversely correlated with soil erosion. Less roots equals erosion and viceversa. Ecosystem functioning avoiding erosion is depending on the amount roots. The invasive species is diminishing the amount of roots and extinction of previous communities, you will have more erosion. A typical way of indirect effects of cc on soil stability. These systems are complex, not easy to communicate to wider audience and lay persons. So it is difficult to communicate these projects, but it is also easier to record changing in species distribution, but studying the responses of ecosystems is a demanding task, that cannot be by a single person. They are just more demanding questions. There are few group willing to di this kind of research, because you have to invest more time, money and manpower to get ecosystem results. It is easier to have results in species distribution with a lower-investment research. Saying that we need more data is a superficial answer. One should ask why we need more, and I am trying to do this. (Baur)*

At this point is clear that some of the main issues regarding the management domain cannot be answered by science alone, but need to be tackled by the joint interest of science, management and policy. However, as the last quotations show, substantial lack of knowledge of ecosystems' structures and functions are seen as an obstacle to a more comprehensive scientific view of the problem. For this reason, further interviews focused on the main scientific obstacles that prevent the formation of climate change research in Swiss protected areas.

#### 4.2 Factors hindering research by the scientific community

From the point of view of science, the task of organizing and conducting climate change research poses significant challenges. Most of the interviewees belonging to categories 1 and 2 highlighted how the need for a historical series of data constitutes an obstacle for monitoring the development of climate change and its physical and ecological consequences. This is especially true in recent PAs, where scientific projects may be entirely new. From springs to moorlands, ecological monitoring initiatives suffer from the absence of reference data gathered in the past. While the case of moorlands has already been documented, Stefanie Von Fumetti drew attention to the same topic of data unavailability, scarcity, or, similarly, to the incomparability of data stored from past observations.

31. *There is plenty of data from the sixties, but it is not easy to do a comparison. The first data on springs that went to the direction of climate change was from the Berchtesgaden National Park in Germany, but it wasn't a long-term monitoring, just 6 springs for 10 years. That is not enough. we don't have a continuous data series. [...].So*

*it is not that we have data series, we have it, but not continuous. You need continuously to have the personnel to monitor. It is also a financial issue.* (Von Fumetti)

On the same lines, Knaus remarked that in the case of moorlands without precise data from the past, any monitoring initiative would suffer from the absence of a baseline comparison.

32. *We have to try to compare the situation of the peatlands in the 1980s and today, 40 years later. It might be useful to have insights into what changed, but we don't know yet.* (Knaus)

The absence of these kinds of epistemological constraints constitutes, as already highlighted in section 4.3, the good fortune of the Swiss National Park, and hence one of the main reasons it stood as the only hub of climate change research in protected areas in Switzerland. Given these particular conditions, it is fair to suspect that not only park administrations might find little interest in addressing a topic perceived as temporally distant or of little practical importance as climate change, but also researchers might see parks as unappealing settings for these kind of studies:

33. *It is not so urgent for Naturepark to undertake research on climate change. And conversely, researchers don't need to go to parks to investigate impacts of climate change. For us [researchers participating in the spring network] parks, national parks especially, are important, because that is where you can find pristine springs, so it is more obvious.* (Von Fumetti)

Von Fumetti pointed implicitly to factors of scale mismatch between the physical and scientific capabilities of the PAs to study effectively climate change and the unavoidable needs that have to be satisfied in order to produce robust evidence and, as a consequence, effective scientific findings. If the temporal scale mismatch has already been stressed, the researcher hypothesizes also a potential spatial mismatch:

34. *Maybe the topic of climate change is just wider than Natureparks and you have to look to whole countries or regions.* (Von Fumetti)

In the absence of historical data describing the past climate, the attention in climate research can be turned to spatial variability. The latter practice, however, might be as problematic as the former, because spatial variability can be grasped in wider spaces than the simple PA.

On the same line of inquiry, Alice Brambilla, a postdoctoral researcher at the University of Zurich, points out some of the main scientific problems that researchers have to face while addressing a problem as complex as climate change. Brambilla is a long-term research collaborator in the oldest PA

of the Italian Alpine range, Parco Nazionale del Gran Paradiso, where she has carried on research on ibex populations. Brambilla is not actively working in Swiss protected areas at the moment, but her experience on assessing the needs, obstacles and problems underlying climate change research practices is highly relevant to understanding better the difficulties that Swiss protected areas have to overcome. During her work, she became familiar with the potential effects that climate change might entail in ibex population dynamics and stresses the importance of the availability of long data series, or, at least, proxy data able to give useful insights on past climate.

35. *The long-term area [of research] in which I work began its own activity around twenty years ago, with an initial aim that was different from the study of climate change but was to have more general long-term observations which would provide deeper knowledge of the species. The observation of a number of particular phenomena, among them a drop in the population of ibex from the mid 1990s, then led the research to be directed towards the causes. Climate change was obviously one of the possible hypotheses. From that point began a series of monitoring over time, because obviously the problem of climate change is the impossibility of reconstructing the variability of the past where there is no progressive data, and so there is no alternative to looking at the future. The ibex has the advantage of having horns that are able to be kept and function like the rings of a tree, therefore the data from the ibex can enable climatic reconstructions of the past, even before 2000, the official beginning of the surveys. We can date back to around the 1980s. There are also methods linked the analyses of satellite images which allow us to work on reconstructions linked to parameters of the environment and not just an individual species. Our research now is moving in different directions, but I will limit myself here to those areas linked to climate change. There are counts on the number of animals and the dynamics of the population, a measure of the population's physical parameters, such as the size of the animals or their horns, which tell us of the environment's trophic availability in the long term, and there are supplementary studies into the quality of the environment itself: we have digital images with which we can measure the quality of grazing and the trophic resource – today we can also find this with sample of vegetation at a seasonal level to see how the trophic resource changes over time. Our hypothesis relating to the ibex is that the main conservation problem is the synchronization between the plant season and the species' biological cycle. Among our methods we have animals who are marked and individually recognizable and we conduct censuses throughout the park. We also have areas of intensive monitoring. The historical series of the censuses begins from 1956 and is very valuable, even with all its limits of homogeneity. The hypothesis linked to the phenology in detail is that with the advance of the vegetation growing season, linked to the reduction of snowfall and higher winter temperatures, the phenological seasons of richer nutrients, with the sprouting of the vegetation, is coming before the birth of the fawns. The time of parturition and the peak of trophic availability are no longer synchronised. As a result the fawns do not reach autumn in conditions of health that are adequate to survive their first winter, which is the critical time for their life expectation. We think therefore that the direct cause of the fall in the population is a fall in the fawns' survival rate. Pathological cases*



*have been excluded, to some extent it was initially linked to a physiological fall given the high density, but the decrease went beyond what was expected, and from that point arose the interest in the fawns. (Brambilla)*

Despite the long research history of the ibex populations and of the PA, uncertainty in ecological responses to climate change still plays an important role in the research activities:

36. *Another possible cause is the species lack of ability for thermo-regulation. The ibex suffers from the heat and climbs to higher levels, but risks distancing itself from its food sources. The work which we are undertaking in the long term shows us that actually the adult male ibex are fatter. This is understandable, since there is less snow and they begin to eat earlier in the spring: the adult makes are not delicate. We don't yet have any clear answers, but the long-term studies will give us these. (Brambilla)*

Focusing on the main scientific needs that play an important role in climate change research, she indicates not only historical data series, but also forecasting models:

37. *There are two problems: the need for long series of data and the reliance of forecasting models which prevents us from giving correct results about the future. Gran Paradiso has worked with CNR <sup>49</sup> to have climate models; there is interest. But everything is poorly organized and the connections often link to contingencies and so to research networks. (Brambilla)*

These models materialize the limitations related to scientific uncertainty, which Kull has already addressed on a theoretical level. Brambilla stresses the absence of a systematic way of addressing climate change at research level. Research on climate change might need different expertise, bound together by a structured network. Even in the case of Gran Paradiso, its cooperation with other research institutions is a direct consequence of contingencies and fruitful occasions of network-building. However, the capacity for networking of large, historical institutions might not be the same as that of recent PAs, as in the Swiss case.

Addressing the wider issue of research distribution in the case of climate change and PAs, Brambilla notes another problem that could prevent climate change research from blossoming: in her experience, defining what constitutes “climate change” can be problematic.

38. *We noticed how the ilcx horns got smaller over the years. We attributed this to the effect of climate change, but something didn't add up. We have now realized that the animals have become larger, in terms of weight, while the horns became smaller in the the past, only to stabilize in recent years. The dynamic is probably extremely complex. The difficulty in carrying out research into climate change is a difficulty of definition: what is meant by*

---

<sup>49</sup> Founded in 1923, Consiglio Nazionale delle Ricerche (CNR) is the largest public research structure in Italy (<https://www.cnr.it/it>)

*climate change? Do we mean increases in temperature? Changes in trophic supply? Changes to the environment at a geomorphological level? There is ambiguity in publishing a work explicitly dedicated to the effects of climate change, when in fact only the effects of temperature on the spatial behaviour of the ilex will be monitored. One can talk in a certain way when giving information, but when presenting research results, temperature and spatial behaviour are not equivalent to climate change.*(Brambilla)

In other words, the problem might be seen as an issue of attribution, where the correlation of some factors is not seen as enough evidence for speaking of climate change. This problem adds to the already large pile of scientific difficulties and is directly linked to the availability of long data series or forecasting models. It also can prevent some publications from explicitly linking their findings to climate change, giving new possible explanations for the relative lack of research records in Alpine PAs, where the dimension of applied research might be overweighting basic research interests and discouraging research that cannot produce definite results.

In conclusion, the few and often incomparable historical data deriving from past climate and environmental monitoring, united with the need for different expertise able to deal with uncertainty, even in the form of climatic models, are the main factors that limit the possibility of research in the field. Additionally, a problem of attribution might hinder scientific research, as in the absence of historical data and forecasting models, the correlation of phenomena to climatic variables might be seen as insufficient for ascribing the causal relation to climate change.

#### 4.5 THE ROLE OF INTERNATIONAL SCIENTIFIC MONITORING PROGRAMS IN THE FUTURE OF CLIMATE CHANGE RESEARCH

The role of international monitoring programmes has been evaluated with every interviewee belonging to category 1 and 2. Even if the obstacle of data scarcity is unavoidable, because the temporal gap in data collection cannot be fixed, PAs might nevertheless serve as climate change observatories if involved in broader monitoring projects. Interviews highlight how this kind of scientific practice can be useful not only for small protected areas with little or no historical data available, but can serve as benchmarks also for large and historical PAs:

39. *The replicability (of the data) is not perfect. In the case of the ilex there is much variability between different areas. Among animal communities there can be young populations and older ones, with different dynamics and histories. This is not only connected to the peculiar characteristics of Gran Paradiso, but to the age of the population. There would need to be analogous conditions elsewhere to be able to replicate the studies. We would*

*be pleased if there were other areas that could replicate the studies, obviously not in an abstract way in which we took any area at all of the Alps and made the comparison, but in a way where the same characteristics would be looked for elsewhere. Yet account has to be taken of the reality; we don't have a possible comparison with our data. For historical, political and human reasons we have this concentration of data in this place. For our future research directions it would also be very valuable to be able to compare the data – ideally, three or four similar situations with long-term data, so as to be able to best understand the variability. I am in favour of promoting replicability because it is the best way of promoting a fundamental scientific principle.* (Brambilla)

If the importance of monitoring networks has already been stressed as an effective way to include small PAs into larger monitoring organizations, Brambilla highlights how even historical PAs would benefit from the inclusion of multiple PAs in the same network:

40. *Speaking of inertia, the world of European research and institutions is quick to accept new concepts. From the perspective of individual institutions there is more inertia, more difficulty in reception. Gran Paradiso is very receptive from this viewpoint. Certainly no-one is asking to change the census methods, but there is participation in PhenoAlp between France and Italy, and those of us working on the ilex are participating in an Interreg France–Italy project. The institution is keen to widen its perspectives, but I understand that a smaller area with fewer resources can struggle to collect external input. It's also true that today to attract investment and resources you need to jump at these opportunities, which are handed down from above but can still work. Gran Paradiso, from this point of view, could, by this type of scientific initiative, drag along other areas too.* (Brambilla)

In concurrence with this statement, Switzerland is showing some signs of involvement in these transboundary networks. Von Fumetti highlights how the formation of a specialist network focused on National Parks is a constituent part of the wider research network on springs:

41. *At the beginning we had a loose network of researchers in National Park Gesäuse and of course another group of people working on springs in Germany, but not focused on National Parks. We are now starting a specialist network on National Parks. We will probably have a network of 4 national parks [Gesäuse, Berchtesgaden, Val Müstair and Swiss National Park]* (Von Fumetti)

When questioned directly on the future role of international scientific cooperation in promoting climate change research, interviewees from category 2 and 4 agreed in principle on the projected centrality of international cooperation, but highlighted two crucial aspects deemed to be necessary in order to increase the number of research studies on the topic, one from a purely scientific standpoint and one related to the policies and practice of the ecosystem's conservation .

First, as Scheurer recalled (7) international research projects have to be designed and conducted in a way that can generate new research in the PAs involved, following, for instance, the blueprint of GLORIA's ancillary projects designed in the Swiss National Park. International research projects should act as an umbrella under which new parallel projects can be organized and conducted. Following this direction, the lack of preceding observations and data might be overcome by a wider spatial dimension that opens the possibility of data comparisons throughout different geographies and integrates the research protocol with new observations outside international research schemes.

Second, especially in PAs where science is not at the core of conservation programmes, or where it shares a central role with local sustainable development goals, research can be translated into effective conservation practices only if accompanied by mechanisms of resources allocation towards all the stakeholders, comprising private landowners, with the final task of conserving endangered, rare or highly-valued ecosystems from the threat that climate change might pose in the foreseeable future. From this perspective, the future development of research projects could be dependent on the possibility of constructing conservation interests among all the stakeholders towards climate-sensitive ecosystems, landscapes, and habitats.

#### 4.6 OF MELTING ICE, MIGRATING SPECIES AND SCIENTIFIC RELEVANCE

By this point, some of the main obstacles slowing the development of climate change research have been detected by the interviews. Many interviewees underlined how interest in climate change might rise with the occurrence of more threatening phenomena, such as water scarcity or landslides. This attitude demonstrates how already developing – and detectable – phenomena, such as species migration and range shifts, or glacier melting, are not considered highly problematic (or simply not manageable) from a management standpoint. However, if the presence of active scientific monitoring projects is dependent on the importance that is given by the PA to these processes, it also tells of the distinctive “scientific culture” of the region under the lens. Scientific regions are formed in the interaction of scientific and managerial interest with epistemic constraints, including funding, policy or management issues. From a management standpoint, Swiss parks are boundary objects that have to fulfill many tasks, one of which is nature protection. However, it is indeed interesting to investigate what objects PA managers and scientists select as their protection (or research) goals and, in the end, what nature they feel they should protect, and how they should study it. For this reason, the topics of ecosystem composition, species migration and glacier melting have been discussed, as some of the few clearly

detectable signs of climate change effects. The goal was to gain a better understanding of their peripheral position in respect to the main lines of inquiry.

In the case of the Aletschwald, the PA could be regarded as an interesting setting for studies on species distribution and ecological composition. The policy regulating nature management has been clearly defined as a nonintervention one, but only for as long as climate change does not constitute a real threat to some core conservation target.

42. *For us at the moment the policy is very clear: we let nature develop. Nature can develop, we are not influencing the development in some precise direction. When we see developments that are disturbing animals, for example, we normally don't think "what can we do to help". Seeing the Tetrao tetrix going higher in this region, we let them adapt their behaviour. We have problems with the red deer [...] there are too many of them and they are disturbing the forest. So we are looking to begin a study to monitor the movement of the deer in order to discover how to react to their density in the Aletsch forest. But we can't say anything until we have results. Take another example. If we have a fire, it disturbs the natural development. We have never had a great fire, but when we do it isn't clear [what we will do]. Probably we would let the fire consume the forest and see the natural processes start anew. Normally we do nothing in terms of intervention to influence natural development. (Albrecht)*

The example of fire, as already shown by the Swiss National Park, is usually the most problematic, since if left unmanaged, the consequences might be bigger than the PA itself. However, even in the specific case of species composition issues, i.e. new species colonizing the protected forest habitat, the policy is uncertain and, once again, postponed to the future.

43. *The problem will be present when we have new plants in the forest. At that moment we will probably decide to do something against [the process], but we cannot take decisions now. We will take a decision when a real problem is there (Albrecht)*

However, it is interesting to see that the PA Aletschwald does not completely rule out the possibility of active intervention in the future. From this point of view, future research on invasive species and neophytes would become policy relevant, at least at the scale of the single PA. Nevertheless, species composition issues cannot claim to be yet at this stage on the bigger picture, taking the entire PA system into consideration. From a management standpoint, an initial answer to the question of why species composition or glaciological research is not yet considered relevant for the single PA can be given regarding the expectations of tourists visiting the PAs.

44. *For general tourists, I think their view of the glacier and the forest is naïve. They see the glacier and the forest and they are ok, but they don't detect changes. A view of the glacier, a walk in the forest, the smell of the pines. I don't think they wonder about ecological or physical changes. Perhaps somebody can ask about [the most] apparent changes, and then we can explain and speak about climate change. When I show them old pictures of the glacier they are shocked. But still, at the moment, we have a 23 km-wide glacier that is here, so there is no problem for them. (Albrecht)*

Albrecht included issues related to glaciers and ecologically valued species in his general discourse on touristic behaviour towards environmental evidence of climate change effects, stressing their fundamental inexistence in the eye of the casual observer:

45. *At the moment we can see, with the retreat of the glacier, the tourist will see little lakes that are a very nice sight. I don't know if they see a problem with the glacier retreat. We will have other problems, like landslides, permafrost etc. But we are still far away. Problems of water availability for hydroelectric functions, they will arise too. When you have such problems, everybody will be more aware, but it will be too late. For us, it is important to show people every day what is at stake with climate change. Many people will not care about the species of the trees you can see here. Arolla pines or other trees are the same to them. The problem will be present when we have new plants in the forest. At that moment we probably will decide to do something against [the process], but we cannot take decisions now. We will take a decision when a real problem is there. (Albrecht)*

On the same line of inquiry, Hammer sees the problems of species composition as an issue that cannot be dealt with using a rigid set of goals, as conserving a particular species in a specific geographical location. He also stresses the political choice undertaken by Switzerland, dealing with ecological connectivity as the only possible solution to conserve species at risk of local extinction.

46. *We know we have to protect the habitats, but we can see that some of the species originally included in the habitat are moving out and others are moving in. The only solution is to be open. Habitats are changing, but still, they have to be protected, not just because they host one or two species, but as a fundamental part of the landscape. But what happens if habitats don't fulfill the criteria to retain legal protection? We don't have a solution here in Switzerland, just a discussion. Our proposition is to connect different biotopes and ecosystems. To connect habitats on the local level, but also on a national level. We have to promote connectivity at each and every level. (Hammer)*

Addressing the same topic, Baur stresses the potential consequences of this choice for highly specialized, rare species:

47. *You cannot fight against climate change, it is mainly a political issue. In most PAs they will have a new species assemblage. Where specialized species will stay in the future? In Switzerland in the next two decades biodiversity is probably going to increase. But these new species are common, generalist species, able to live in different situations. Our concern should be on the rare, highly specialized species. They can move relatively, most of the specialist will not be able to migrate from one site to the other. Of the PAs they should think more of these species, because they could have refuge for them. Some of them will probably become extinct with the competition of colonizing species, but there actually is the key question: what to do we do for rare and specialized species? You can try to figure out tools for particular species, but a general answer is beyond me. It is a large question mark.* (Baur)

Even in this connectivity framework, the possibility of losing some species is not ruled out of the question. As Von Fumetti highlights for the case of springs:

48. *If they are not able to adapt to higher temperatures or to shift then they are gone. At least in some regions, even if probably not everywhere.* (Von Fumetti)

At this stage of the inquiry, it is unavoidable to ask why – in a large, transboundary conceptual framework like connectivity, designed for allowing species to migrate and break free from isolation and related risk of extinction – species-specific research on spatial mobility and population dynamics in relation to climate change struggle to find their way into research agendas. From the point of view of the single PA's management, the fight against the effects of climate change could be seen as an integral part of “nature protection”. With the goal of discussing this task, two experts on landscape ecology, Felix Kienast and Mathias Bürgi from the WSL, were consulted. The alleged centrality of climate change tackling operations has been widely discussed, and it reveals some ideas that animate the debate at the scale of the landscape. This particular scale has been selected because of the centrality it shows in the context of the connectivity framework, where a good amount of territorial planning is performed. Discussing the role of parks and PAs in the “fight” against climate change effects, Kienast remarks how the task and the main focus of conservation should be different from “fighting” changes.

49. *The strong emphasis on conservation is on fighting? No, there is nothing to fight. Species arrangement will change, and new species assemblages will form. The big task is to design a kind of future landscape which people can be attached to and where species can find new habitats. The strict conservation aspect will fail. You can't find new localities – either for humans or for plants and animals – that are identical to the ones where conservation issues were implemented originally.* (Kienast)

Even downscaling the focus from the wider landscape to the single PA, Kienast's arguments follow the same reasoning:

50. *I think that protected areas have some meaning for what they stand for. For example, in National Parks in the USA, you have a topic that is compatible with the landscape characters. So for example, if in Glacier National Park the glacier was gone, the meaning will be necessarily different. Let's think along the line of a disappearing glacier. Even if they disappear, they can have a meaning. Even if a glacier vanishes, the moraines will be there and remind people what used to be there, and people will visit the area the same. I think meanings don't disappear, they are replaced. I think it is wrong to fight for the one and only meaning of a place or landscape in the light of climate change. (Kienast)*

On the same position Bürgi addresses the question of the symbolic meanings associated with the environment, its ecosystems, and species assemblages:

51. *Talking about symbolic meaning, maybe it is a matter of defining what stories places might hold. We get rid of something that has not fitted, but we generate something new and meaningful. There is work to do [...] The question is very practical: why do you want to keep telling these stories? We have to get rid of some stories. Also with the glaciers, seeing the traces witnessing the past presence of the glacier, you will have very relevant stories to tell. When the story loses the meaning, you have to get rid of it. It is not static, stories have a meaning for people, and meaning changes. (Bürgi)*

The only caveat expressed is that the speed of the process might pose some troubles to the PA:

*Probably losing things in a small time span might be the problem. It makes thing less acceptable (Kienast)*

In the two scientists' interpretation, it is easy to see why species composition is not addressed as a problem for the PAs, as they should be concerned with pursuing other adaptation goals, such as learning to cope with a changing environment and generating new relationships between ecosystems, landscapes and local populations. The position assumed by the majority of Swiss PAs is more understandable, under this light, waiting for climate change effects to happen in order to actively adapt.

At that point, climate change research might increase. In the case of glaciological research, the reason for such a substantial lack of research may be found by looking more widely than only in Switzerland. Looking back at chapter 3, it is easy to see that the overall distribution of glaciological research in protected areas is strongly concentrated in the hotspot of Stelvio National Park, while outside it there is little contact between research and PAs. It is clear that glaciological research of climate change effects does not need to focus on PAs in order to gather evidence. Conversely, the viewpoint of the two



landscape ecologists is helpful in understanding why Swiss PAs do not see glacial retreat as a priority in their research efforts. The phenomenon is very similar to the one described by Von Fumetti, where PAs and scientists may lack interest in each other.

However, the lack of policy and management importance given to research on topics such as species composition and migration, as well as their postposition in the future of scientific research in protected areas, still clashes with the central political position assumed by the international discourse on connectivity. How can a highly impactful theme on the political sphere not be supported by a core research focus? The point of view of research coordination organs, as in the case of the Entlebuch, may help to find some insights:

52. *If a species is isolated genetically it is probably just gone. Can it survive, does it have enough genetic variability? We have the example here of a plant that occurs in two places, here and in northern countries. Some restoration projects have been done, but one night a deer decided to eat some of the plants. Can it now survive? If you take these two points [on map] they have different subsoils, one is dry and one is not. How can you create connectivity? Sometimes it is just impossible – from a theoretical point as well. [...] it is all still highly conceptual-hypothetical. The fact that species might move upwards is something people can grasp. Initiatives like connectivity network are difficult to understand.[...] if you want to do a connectivity network for this plant how do you do it? This species would most likely not go anywhere else. Hence, it is nice to think about building up networks, but illustrating what this means in practice and from the perspective of concrete species, it can get difficult to explain and justify (Knaus)*

It is probably the perceived hypothetical dimension of the whole project that is deterring these kinds of scientific project from development. From an analysis of the available scientific literature, it seems that the research initiatives are all born on higher spatial scales than the single PA<sup>50</sup>; hence, research on the spatial mobility of the species, as well as inquiries on changes in the ecosystem composition, might be seen as a concern for a higher spatial level of research than the single PA. However, analysing the current research on connectivity also from a temporal point of view, it is clear that a core research programme still has to be developed, although an initial – and indeed very small – cluster of research saw the light at the beginning of the century, while a second cluster, slightly larger, was formed between 2015 and 2018. It is probably a matter of time until the growth of connectivity allows it to affirm itself as a scientifically-epistemically relevant research topic, able to spread through different PAs since its policy relevance status is already a steady reality. Nevertheless, the topic needs further research in order

---

50 All the research records indexed in Web of Science point at regional scales, taking into consideration wide landscapes, as in the case of the ECONNETC project

to confirm the hypothesis and actually monitor how the status of policy-relevance translates to the scientific domain.

Another point of interest is formed by the analysis of the potential role that the notion of iconicity entails. The role of iconicity and charisma as properties of some organisms or even landscapes has already been addressed in the previous chapters as one of the main drivers of conservation processes. Migrations and issues of species composition, as well as glacier retreats in fact, can surge to a new relevance status if taken outside their strict naturalistic dimension and analysed as a social phenomenon. In the case of iconic landscapes – like the ones ideally protected by UNESCO under the “World Heritage site” label – the PAs can do very little in order to limit the changes that climate variations can impose: receding glaciers, less snow cover or water availability. However, these changes can be studied – in a strongly “applied research” focus – together with the touristic and local population behaviour and perceptions toward the new landscape, as in the case of Canada (Groulx et al., 2017). The case of iconic or charismatic species traces its influence back to the past. The example of the Swiss National Park represents an interesting benchmark in this regard. The successful management paradigm adopted here came to know its limitations in the past, especially with the management of wildfires – which still represent the social limits of the non-intervention rule – but also occasionally of some debated species reintroduction<sup>51</sup>.

53. *Extinction is a natural process and specific species conservation has never been a target, but still, the case of the Ibex broke out of the official paradigm of non-intervention with natural processes. There are limits to this concept and charismatic species are probably sitting at the edge. But the history of SNP has some other examples of the limits of this conception as a non-intervention space, like in the case of wildfire. It is interesting to explore where the concept gets intertwined with other dimensions. To map the border in order to understand where the social limit is, where the problem stops being scientific and starts being social. (Kupper)*

It is exactly in the intertwining between the natural and the social that climate change might find a way into the scientific agendas of the PAs. If parks and other PAs are to be “beautiful promises for the future” and models of sustainable development, then research inquiring into the relationships between physical, biological and ecological changes and the social consequences of these changes cannot be anything but a central topic of the future. In Felix Kienast’s word. *“The big task is to design a kind of future landscape which people can be attached to”*. When read in this light, climate change research could find another way – independent from international monitoring undertakings and strictly place-dependent –

---

51 See Kupper, 2014

into the research focus of the PAs. Not with the final task to arm PAs for an unwinnable war against inevitable climate-induced evolutions in ecosystems and landscapes, but by addressing the task of generating new spaces for migrating species, and new meanings in the various form of human-environment relationships that will take place in the future of parks and PAs. This hypothetical research programme could also bypass the need for long series of data describing the past evolution of climate or climate-related variables, since its focus should be on the present and future dimension of these relationships between natural and social worlds. Neither the preliminary data analysis, nor the interviews, however, could highlight potential areas able to display substantial alteration of the landscape character. As a result, the whole discussion remained highly hypothetical.

#### 4.7 SYNTHESIS OF THE DATA

The analysis of research practices of the Swiss subregion is helpful in forming an idea of how the patterns of research distribution highlighted in chapter 3 hide complex dynamics at the interface between science, management, and policy. If the research has been carried so far on a indexed data analysis basis, shifting the focus to the network of actors behind the data allows a different kind of information to be obtained. The methodology of the expert interviews has allowed light to be shed on the dynamics that form scientific and managerial interest toward climate change, which today remain largely uncodified. Moreover, the qualitative data are particularly well fitted for the task of inquiring into the travel capacity of science on a (sub)regional level, where the low density might undermine the explanatory capacity of the data.

From a perspective encompassing science and management, some issues in addressing effectively climate change arise. It appears that when heavy economic, social and political organizations like PAs allocate interest, funding, and workforce, they seldom do so without concrete evidence of a threat towards their core interests. Up to this point, from an ecological view, the lack of research data and substantial knowledge regarding the structures and functions of the ecosystems reduces the possibilities of tracking changes. In the Swiss context, in particular, the young age of the majority of Swiss PAs probably forces them to focus on monitoring acceptance within local populations or other more urgent issues. Even when they already empirically face some degree of change that is considered tolerable from the PA's administration, climate change is apparently regarded as a phenomenon to be addressed in the future. This attitude is mostly explained by the need to face issues regarding land use, land-owning

rights, and concessions. Even if some signs of change in ecosystems composition might be empirically detectable, their relatively low current impact is preventing the formation of keen interest.

Additionally, interviewees belonging to category 2 highlighted how the physical capability to cope with changes is influencing research. Scientific projects in protected areas have to embrace the dimension of applied research. The retreat of a glacier and the upward migration of a particular species do not constitute phenomena that can be managed or controlled and they – probably – pose no threat to the integrity of the PA. By contrast, an increase in the number or intensity of wildfires or landslides might be perceived as a physical threat. Given the low density of research distribution in the PA system, it is probably safe to assume that climate change does not yet constitute a physical threat to protected areas' infrastructures or to the integrity of the ecosystems they host.

Critical considerations on the spatial and temporal necessities of a hypothetical climate change research project led some of the interviewees to advance hypotheses of a scale mismatch between the problems related to climate change and the inquiry capabilities of PAs, both in relation to time and space. The absence of historical data means that the acquisition of useful information could take decades to show meaningful trends, and the limited geographical scope of the PAs might not be an ideal setting to monitor the unraveling of ecological changes. Researchers also highlighted the necessity of networking in climate change monitoring, since some of the necessary tools, such as forecast models, could be developed only in cooperation with external research institutions. These cooperative projects are easier to arrange for large, historical and socially affirmed PAs, while smaller and more recent areas might face substantial difficulties.

The result of such a combination of limiting factors is the drop in climate change research in the background of research and monitoring efforts in almost every PA.

Additionally, the viability of international monitoring networks as a solution for fostering climate research in protected areas has been evaluated and some of the potential benefits addressed. However, the solution can be effective only if the international research programmes are able on the one hand to stimulate the creation of new, ancillary research studies on a local level and on the other – in PAs where sustainable development goals are part of the mission – mobilize resources to allocate to the different stakeholders involved in conservation of valued or endangered ecosystems.

Moreover, the issues regarding the composition of ecosystems are not currently seen as phenomena of paramount importance for the maintaining of the mission of any PA. The same considerations can be applied to the case of receding glaciers, where the impossibility of actively taking management measures to compare the rates of melting is also seen as a factor determining the lack of dedicated research

efforts, especially considering that the majority of the PAs are not entirely focused on the study and protection of nature, but share its resources with socio-economic development goals. With the development of climate change effects and the translation of the foundational concept of connectivity from the political to the scientific domain<sup>52</sup> and the concrete definition of research programmes, more studies may be seen dealing with – even if not necessarily in an exclusive manner – climate change effects on species. At the same time, and potentially even on a local level, the interviews highlighted how the mission of PAs in the face of a changing climate should be focused on the creation of new meanings and new ways to generate attachment between people and landscapes or environments. In the light of this task, and coherently with the necessity of applied research that might be immediately useful for the management, new research directions can be developed in monitoring the perceptions and behaviour of tourists and local populations toward the changing landscapes and ecosystems.

In conclusion, the young age of the Swiss PAs affects negatively their capacity for effective enquiry into climate change, both from a managerial and scientific standpoint. The relatively short existence of the institutions forces some PAs to focus on local acceptance and more urgent issues, while the lack of long-term data suitable for climate research hampers the PAs' capacity to conduct research. Additionally, it should not be forgotten that Swiss Natureparks are born out of the need of creating areas where the goal of nature conservation shares a central role with sustainable development, and hence research efforts are not limited to the natural science domain, but involve socio-economic sciences that focus their interests on different phenomena. However, international cooperation in the form of scientific monitoring networks and the intertwining of social and natural phenomena that climate change will probably cause in the future could potentially bring new attention to an otherwise peripheral scientific topic.

---

<sup>52</sup> Note that the issue of habitat connectivity was born as an exclusively scientific problem in the domain of ecology. However, the adoption of the term in the political sphere and promoted the centrality of the topic in the general discourse around conservation. When we forecast the translation of connectivity from the political to the scientific sphere, we are referring to the scale of the PAs, where scientific records are still lacking. Hence, it will be a mistake to generalize and assume that ecological research on connectivity *in toto* has been made epistemically relevant because of political interest. The case of connectivity provide an interesting example of the feedbacks that animates the relationship between science and policy in conservation.

## V. CONCLUDING REMARKS

### 5.1 OVERVIEW OF THE MAIN RESULTS

Our journey led us throughout different geographies, from the global level to the sub-regional level of Switzerland, trying to find the factors that are shaping the distribution of research, as well as some of the main features that are characterizing different scientific regions. In order to synthesize the main findings and limitations of the research, the paragraph will address, step by step, what the different chapters highlighted.

The introductory first chapter reconstructed some of the key historical moments and main concepts that characterize the Alps as a scientific region”, and pointed at the current state of the art in climate change science.

Chapter 2 shown how climate change science is widely distributed in protected areas all over the world, even if the majority of the indexed research is produced in North America, the UK, and Australia. Even in the evidence provided by the data should be normalized for the sizes of the scientist population in different countries, it is clearly showing that the indexed research is dominated by the English speaking academies. However, this fact does not imply that the most targeted regions coincide with the home country of this institutions.

In the case of the United States, we dived in the public discourse developed around the effects of climate change in protected areas and noted how climate change is deeply rooted in the everyday practices of conservation and scientific research. As the phenomenon deepen its roots in the scientific culture of American PAs, its own identity changes. Climate changes become a cultural object, something that cannot be contained in the domain of natural sciences and probably of science in general. The articles we addressed showed clearly how the effects of climate change, even if inquired on a scientific level, are strengthening connections with scientists life histories, personal feelings towards precise environments and ecosystems. The analysis of two policy documents, namely the *revisiting Leopold* guidelines and the Canadian guidelines for protected areas, highlighted that, in particular regions, the interest of science in climate change effects in protected areas is correlated with the presence of particular policy guidelines. The interconnections between the two spheres have been only highlighted, without further developing the analysis of the nature of the relationship. However, for the scope of the analysis, the presence of dedicated policy documents have been assumed as a reliable proxy of the presence of a robust volume of scientific literature addressing the problem.

Coherently with the last finding, we looked for encompassing policy documents in our specific region of interest. However, we could not find a single, large-scope policy guideline,

Moreover, in chapter 3 we discussed the specific case of Alpine PAs, and tested a more in-depth bibliometric and science-mapping analysis of the regional literature. The results highlighted how climate research in Alpine protected areas is circulating across and beyond the region on different “railways”. Four National Parks are producing more than half of the total body of literature indexed in Web of Science. These Parks are leaving their marks in the literature on a content level, since they are either driving research conducted in monitoring networks or developing their own research programme. Minor protected areas are contributing less in the general research landscape, even if global and regional networks of research are involving progressively more parks and protected areas. On the other side, a parallel analysis in the grey literature highlighted how a good degree of additional literature rests outside of the most commonly known science database. This body of research enjoys a lower degree of mobility, since its often written in local languages and it is not published in international journals. In Livingstonian terms, we can say that some Parks are serving as primary laboratories for conservation in light of climate change, as they often conduct and produce more research, and promote a wider, more efficient circulation of research products.

In the last chapter we analysed from close distance what are the main factors that are preventing the formation of a robust body of literature on climate change in protected areas. Switzerland was an ideal stage for understanding the limitations that climate science has to overcome in order to spread in the majority of managed protected areas. Additionally, the presence of national databases provided a guidance in exploring the otherwise dark depth of grey literature. Expert interviews highlighted the centrality of different factors that are impeding the development of research, ranging from the absence of historical data to the lacking of monitoring systems in place. Experts stressed also how research endeavours are subjects to constraints in funding and workforce, and how climate change can be penalized whenever economic interests are at stakes in the competition for resources between research projects”. Moreover, some experts underlined the fact that climate change could be perceived as a problem “waiting to happen”, a future concern. This perception could be the results of the inertia that is typical of heavy, slow structures when facing changes, but it also stress the dimension of uncertainty, the “uncertainty monster” as has been recently defined (Curry, Webster, 2011), that constitute an obstacle to climate change adaptation.

The general panorama is complex, and diverse factors are exercising an influence on the distribution of climate research

## 5.2 FURTHER LINES OF RESEARCH

The results of this exploratory analysis can stimulate new questions of research, that could constitute new lines of inquiry in the same field:

- (I) Once defined the main feature of the literature produced in Alpine protected areas, new insights on the regional identity of research can be obtained by comparing different regional literature. On the same line of reasoning we employed in the first and fourth chapter, it could be interesting to compare the Alpine literature with the ones produced in the other main mountain ranges of the world. In a geography of science perspective, this exercise could constitute a valid benchmark of the existence of different “cultures of science” in approaching the problem of climate change in protected areas on a macroregional level.
- (II) Experts interviews highlighted many otherwise invisible processes, acting behind the world of publications. From a certain standpoint, the different opinions and sometimes contrasting readings of experts helped to give more voice to the science mapping and bibliometrical analysis. It could be fruitful to test again this methodology in other Alpine subregions. In alternative, with a different geographical scale, next interviews could be focusing on the functioning of research hotspots, in order to shed light on the specific interests that move Ecrins, Stelvio, Gran Paradiso, and Swiss National Parks.
- (III) The world of gray literature, as already stated clearly in chapters 3 and 4, cannot just be ignored. On the contrary, it can reveal the existence of a complex underwood that is made invisible by the towering trees of international publications. Are the content of these two bodies of research similar? Do they differ? Why these imbalance in publication practices exists? And more importantly, how can we explore this universe without comprehensive databases, without recurring to a slow and often inefficient close reading approach?

## 5.3 SOME CONCLUDING REMARKS ON THE GEOGRAPHY OF SCIENCE AND THE CONCEPTUAL AND METHODOLOGICAL INSTRUMENTS EMPLOYED

From an epistemological standpoint, the application of science mapping and scientometrics, combined with expert interviews constituted a good strategy for integrating quantitative descriptors with qualitative insights on the mechanisms that regulate the pattern of distribution. The results are confirming the potential of this kind of integrative method. Expert interviews helped us to save the



dimension of “science in action” (Latour, 2003), moving from the documental level (the publications) to the processes of science-making.

Moreover, some issues had to be faced in the process of projecting and writing this research. A source of struggle came from the integration of the two methodologies. The methods are radically different in their capacity of addressing precise questions. Qualitative experts interviews are easily directed towards the object of the interest. Hence, we can say that the method is rather “question-driven”. Conversely, data mined from the scientific databases are hardly bending to the pure curiosity of the researcher. The research approach in this case is “data-driven”, since the initial questions that led us to employ the methodology are not finding ready-made answers. To integrate both methodologies in a question-driven research is not easy, as the data provided by the database could just miss the point of the discussion. As a result, this work is the outcome of a long-fought battle to maintain an equilibrium between the more instinctual and innate search for answers to our leading questions and the analysis of what data structures and patterns can tell.

This last point can be particularly hostile for a human geographer, used to employ mainly qualitative methods. Network maps are characterized by *the independent life of mathematical objects* (Petrovich, 2018). Statistical measures that helped us to describe the main feature of the network are many, describing the mathematical properties of the edges and links that compose the network. One can easily lose sight of the original question that led to the choice of this methodology since many questions can arise exploring the different functional relationships between the data.

Despite this difficulties, we believe that the path we took could be a fruitful one, in order to apply the framework and the leading questions of the geography of science to contemporary research questions, like climate change. Our hope is that this work can constitute a small contribution in the way of geography to reconstruct a fruitful interest toward the spatial dimension of science, as a mean to disentangle the complexity that characterizes global problems.

After all, we could discover that geography, even in this universalizing, fast traveling world, still matters.

## APPENDIX I – DATASET OF CHAPTER 2: TABLES WITH CENTRALITY MEASURES

Table 1: Research Institutions

id	label	x	y	cluster	weight<Links>	Percentile Degree	weight<Total link strenght h>	weight<Documents>	Percentile Documents	weight<Citations>	weight<Norm. citations>	score<Avg. pub. year>	score<Avg. citations>	score<Avg. norm. citations>
307	james cook univ	0.2009	-0.1256	9	47	20	76	21	4	678	407.017	20.138.095	322.857	19.382
418	nature conservancy	0.5046	0.1185	11	42		62	20		784	278.368	2012.7	39.2	13.918
781	univ queensland	0.3335	0.092	3	41		56	19		616	32.424	20.137.895	324.211	17.065
835	univ york	-0.6929	0.1096	4	28		47	16		380	280.483	20.134.375	23.75	1.753
103	conservat int	0.2442	0.0636	5	35		49	13		726	226.499	20.115.385	558.462	17.423
81	chinese acad sci	0.2443	0.471	1	9		12	10		74	247.318	2015.1	7.4	24.732
759	univ oxford	-0.5352	0.1044	6	28		33	8		239	123.059	2011.5	29.875	15.382
862	wildlife conservat soc	0.8344	0.084	3	23		27	8		269	15.778	2013.25	33.625	19.722
223	griffith univ	0.2518	0.0084	5	20		27	8		108	86.267	2014.25	13.5	10.783
697	univ	-12.554	-0.1237	12	19		20	8		197	13.043	2.013.8	24.625	16.304

	helsinki											75		
636	univ calif santa barbara	0.7054	-0.091	3	16		21	8		456	121.194	2.011.625	57	15.149
827	univ western australia	0.3971	0.0297	9	12		20	8		107	93.597	2012.75	13.375	1.17
739	univ nacl autonoma mexico	13.857	-0.3087	7	10		10	8		422	121.391	2007.5	52.75	15.174
846	us geol survey	-0.0599	0.1437	1	9		11	8		80	55.497	2.013.875	10	0.6937
665	univ fed goias	29.401	0.3909	15	4		5	8		87	137.444	2015.5	10.875	17.181
32	australian natl univ	0.436	-0.0384	9	28		39	7		80	69.678	20.145.714	114.286	0.9954
648	univ copenhagen	-0.23	-0.0416	1	21		26	7		216	104.158	20.131.429	308.571	1.488
497	royal soc protect birds	-0.6728	0.1021	4	18		28	7		354	137.915	20.114.286	505.714	19.702
803	univ tasmania	0.4702	-0.0702	3	14		14	7		62	86.126	20.137.143	88.571	12.304
638	univ cambrid	-0.3749	-0.0607	6	27		29	6		18	3.506	2015.5	3	0.5843

	ge													
877	world wildlife fund	0.4839	0.1029	3	22		28	6		310	132.842	2013	516.667	2.214
46	birdlife int	-0.1204	-0.0246	1	21		28	6		204	81.166	20.143. 333	34	13.528
660	univ exeter	-0.554	0.1911	4	20		27	6		125	83.287	2014.5	208.333	13.881
794	univ sheffiel d	-0.7542	0.0751	4	20		27	6		537	172.061	20.098. 333	89.5	28.677
682	univ florida	-0.108	0.1381	6	17		18	6		146	188.906	2014	243.333	31.484
536	stanfor d univ	0.4621	0.1061	3	16		18	6		110	188.506	2014.5	183.333	31.418
430	noaa	0.6711	0.0113	11	15		20	6		217	77.312	2012.5	361.667	12.885
118	csic	0.1905	-0.2488	8	14		16	6		382	127.531	20.141. 667	636.667	21.255
633	univ calif davis	0.5858	0.0399	11	14		18	6		168	78.138	20.133. 333	28	13.023
734	univ montpe llier 2	-0.1811	-0.3108	8	14		22	6		127	11.352	2014	211.667	1.892
829	univ wiscons in	-0.091	-0.1912	2	13		13	6		54	51.437	2015.5	9	0.8573
845	us forest serv	0.2219	0.0976	5	23		28	5		48	62.122	2013.8	9.6	12.424
181	equilibri um res	0.0591	0.0757	5	20		26	5		274	209.416	2015.2	54.8	41.883
53	bourne	-0.8007	0.1739	4	14		18	5		61	70.145	2014	12.2	14.029

	mouth univ													
540	stockhol m univ	0.8984	-0.1253	7	12		12	5		136	49.605	2014.2	27.2	0.9921
412	natl pk serv	0.0783	0.2765	1	9		11	5		13	16.925	2015	2.6	0.3385
902	zool soc london	0.0266	0.043	6	9		10	5		109	59.587	2013.4	21.8	11.917
653	univ durham	-0.2086	0.0647	1	6		13	5		209	60.969	2012	41.8	12.194
787	univ roma la sapienz a	-0.4312	-0.2855	2	5		6	5		69	90.444	2015.2	13.8	18.089
190	finnish environ m inst	-18.412	-0.2012	12	3		5	5		113	41.163	2011.2	22.6	0.8233
522	simon fraser univ	-0.3388	0.5401	13	2		2	5		69	89.192	2011.2	13.8	17.838
387	nat england	-0.7299	0.2825	4	23		34	4		160	105.102	2013.5	40	26.276
315	joint nat conserv at comm	-0.773	0.0807	4	21		34	4		256	115.866	2011.5	64	28.967
419	nelson mandel a metrop olitan univ	0.6022	-0.0979	5	16		19	4		279	74.588	2012	69.75	18.647

642	univ cape town	0.4795	-0.121	5	14		16	4		94	47.267	2012.5	23.5	11.817
219	great barrier reef marine pk author	0.5065	-0.0361	9	13		19	4		111	43.784	2011.75	27.75	10.946
719	univ london imperial coll sci technol & med	0.0044	-0.2068	8	11		14	4		80	73.819	2014.25	20	18.455
123	csiro	0.4703	-0.0483	9	10		15	4		55	3.962	2013.25	13.75	0.9905
691	univ grenobl e alpes	-0.2735	-0.3113	8	10		14	4		32	55.043	2016.25	8	13.761
738	univ n carolina	0.5546	-0.004	3	9		9	4		207	123.445	2013	51.75	30.861
820	univ vienna	-0.5776	0.4824	13	9		9	4		37	21.266	2013.25	9.25	0.5317
637	univ calif santa cruz	0.6243	-0.017	3	8		9	4		30	26.252	2014.5	7.5	0.6563
670	univ fed minas gerais	0.654	0.1474	3	8		11	4		265	84.574	2011.75	66.25	21.144
690	univ grenobl e 1	-0.1874	-0.3405	9	8		9	4		121	61.451	2012.5	30.25	15.363

374	montana state univ	-0.0235	0.2501	1	6		8	4		18	12.031	2014.25	4.5	0.3008
331	leibniz inst ecol urban & reg dev	-0.567	0.5426	13	4		5	4		17	0.9665	2014.5	4.25	0.2416
349	mcgill univ	11.159	-0.1686	7	4		4	4		48	14.462	2013.75	12	0.3615
773	univ politecn madrid	-0.4111	-0.2814	2	4		5	4		149	97.873	2012	37.25	24.468
144	dalhousie univ	0.6255	-0.0541	3	3		3	4		150	61.556	2015.5	37.5	15.389
724	univ maryland	-0.1863	-0.0806	2	2		3	4		108	37.046	2012	27	0.9262
824	univ washington	0.4326	-0.0453	3	2		2	4		46	46.143	2014.25	11.5	11.536
833	univ wurzburg	0.0656	0.0404	6	2		3	4		55	31.269	2014.75	13.75	0.7817
704	univ ioannina	-0.5942	0.5025	13	1		1	4		56	31.689	2012	14	0.7922
654	univ e anglia	-0.1269	0.0281	4	25		25	3		164	62.656	20.113.333	546.667	20.885
59	british trust ornithol	-0.9744	0.1039	4	22		28	3		83	81.363	20.143.333	276.667	27.121
512	scottish nat	-0.7337	0.1498	4	20		25	3		65	61.545	20.146.667	216.667	20.515

	heritage													
289	int union conserv at nat	0.3226	-0.0421	5	18		21	3		26	67.169	20.156.667	86.667	2.239
687	univ glasgow	-0.8806	0.2076	4	15		16	3		20	31.343	20.156.667	66.667	10.448
120	csir	0.6497	-0.131	5	14		16	3		76	28.651	20.113.333	253.333	0.955
716	univ liverpool	-0.781	0.1742	4	14		17	3		42	48.202	20.146.667	14	16.067
114	country side council wales	-0.7352	-0.0056	2	11		13	3		222	71.606	20.086.667	74	23.869
163	duke univ	0.6177	0.1226	3	11		11	3		143	70.491	20.123.333	476.667	23.497
298	ispra	-11.563	-0.0617	10	10		12	3		37	39.744	20.136.667	123.333	13.248
805	univ technol sydney	0.3795	-0.1111	9	10		11	3		23	20.617	2015	76.667	0.6872
94	colegio frontera sur	13.955	-0.2645	7	9		13	3		4	0.2274	20.163.333	13.333	0.0758
92	cnrs	-0.1951	-0.3331	8	8		12	3		30	41.379	2016	10	13.793
867	woods hole res ctr	0.643	0.1467	3	8		11	3		279	104.945	20.116.667	93	34.982
79	charles univ prague	-10.319	-0.1285	10	7		8	3		15	21.809	20.143.333	5	0.727



177	environ m def fund	0.6448	0.1425	3	7		8	3		82	45.959	20.133. 333	273.333	1.532
302	iucn	0.2374	0.3941	1	7		7	3		14	30.977	20.143. 333	46.667	10.326
367	missour i bot garden	-0.5746	0.0108	6	7		8	3		15	0.8321	20.126. 667	5	0.2774
464	plymout h marine lab	-0.0119	0.0733	6	7		7	3		76	120.647	20.146. 667	253.333	40.216
186	europa n commis s	-0.3016	-0.1925	2	6		6	3		6	15.789	20.166. 667	2	0.5263
340	lund univ	-11.844	0.0221	10	6		6	3		27	37.241	2016	9	12.414
503	s african natl biodiver s inst	0.8463	-0.1989	5	6		7	3		427	76.143	2008	1.423.3 33	25.381
626	univ buchare st	-0.4794	0.5566	13	6		6	3		23	13.599	2015	76.667	0.4533
713	univ lausann e	-0.1572	-0.3331	8	6		6	3		29	37.785	2015	96.667	12.595
127	csiro marine & atmosph er res	0.8824	-0.0966	7	5		6	3		273	59.801	20.096. 667	91	19.934

403	natl inst environ m studies	-0.1859	0.4936	13	5		6	3		13	0.7913	20.146. 667	43.333	0.2638
692	univ guadala jara	15.572	-0.3141	7	5		5	3		0	1	20.116. 667	0	0.3333
775	univ porto	-0.3423	-0.2347	2	5		5	3		160	108.276	2014	533.333	36.092
341	macqua rie univ	0.184	-0.209	9	4		4	3		37	10.881	2012	123.333	0.3627
480	queens univ belfast	-0.8642	0.124	4	4		4	3		112	4.384	20.113. 333	373.333	14.613
558	tech univ berlin	-0.5669	0.5428	13	4		5	3		17	0.9665	2014	56.667	0.3222
632	univ calif berkele y	0.4039	-0.0329	3	4		5	3		19	31.216	2016	63.333	10.405
646	univ concepc ion	-0.0973	0.2623	1	4		4	3		21	22.184	20.146. 667	7	0.7395
726	univ melbou rne	10.056	-0.1256	7	4		4	3		75	16.855	2010	25	0.5618
786	univ rhode isl	-0.9799	-0.1253	10	4		4	3		6	22.375	20.153. 333	2	0.7458
797	univ southa mpton	-0.7305	0.0748	6	4		4	3		25	24.816	20.126. 667	83.333	0.8272

468	pontifici a univ catolica chile	-0.1434	0.2662	1	3		3	3		34	22.088	20.133. 333	113.333	0.7363
606	univ arizona	0.0111	0.2637	1	3		3	3		14	0.6617	20.116. 667	46.667	0.2206
696	univ hawaii manoa	0.6158	0.0176	3	3		3	3		16	0.5841	20.153. 333	53.333	0.1947
757	univ oulu	-17.064	-0.1861	12	3		3	3		34	29.351	20.143. 333	113.333	0.9784
564	texas a&m univ	-0.2721	-0.2263	2	2		2	3		15	0.8702	20.143. 333	5	0.2901
645	univ chinese acad sci	0.252	0.4672	1	2		4	3		16	46.383	2016	53.333	15.461
701	univ idaho	-0.1354	0.1167	1	2		2	3		31	19.425	2014	103.333	0.6475
644	univ chile	-0.1597	-0.3455	8	1		1	3		27	11.518	2012	9	0.3839
772	univ plymout h	-0.0136	0.0876	6	1		1	3		23	17.711	2014	76.667	0.5904
439	nsw off environ m & heritage	0.352	-0.0135	5	18		23	2		18	32.341	2015.5	9	16.171
859	wetland s int south asia	0.3521	-0.0125	5	18		23	2		18	32.341	2015.5	9	16.171
149	defra	-0.8431	0.1588	4	17		22	2		61	51.019	2014	30.5	25.509

139	ctr tecnol forestal catalun ya	0.1857	0.0385	5	15		17	2		10	26.316	2016	5	13.158
593	united nations environ m progra mme world conserv at	0.2268	0.0281	5	15		16	2		31	30.003	2015	15.5	15.001
767	univ perpign an	0.2967	-0.1383	8	15		16	2		144	56.369	2011.5	72	28.185
823	univ warwick	0.2278	0.0235	6	15		16	2		181	61.386	2010	90.5	30.693
62	butterfl y conserv at	-0.8001	0.176	4	14		17	2		25	34.483	2015	12.5	17.241
421	nerc ctr ecol & hydrol	-0.7993	0.1753	4	14		17	2		25	34.483	2015	12.5	17.241
532	sovon dutch ctr field ornithol	-10.823	0.066	10	13		14	2		66	57.915	2014	33	28.958
428	newcast le univ	0.5199	-0.0412	11	11		12	2		156	47.821	2010	78	2.391
711	univ la	0.5448	-0.0451	11	11		11	2		127	38.373	2012.5	63.5	19.187

	reunion													
858	wetland sint	-0.9886	0.0932	10	10		10	2		23	32.976	2015.5	11.5	16.488
48	birdwat ch ireland	-0.8959	0.1325	4	9		10	2		50	3.133	2013	25	15.665
151	dept environ m & conserv at	0.4682	-0.051	9	9		11	2		52	30.064	2012.5	26	15.032
420	nerc	-0.7461	0.0946	6	9		9	2		93	67.177	2014	46.5	33.588
525	so cross univ	0.4671	-0.0608	9	9		9	2		33	20.039	2013.5	16.5	10.019
529	south african natl pk	0.477	-0.0581	5	9		9	2		13	17.931	2015	6.5	0.8966
659	univ evora	0.0053	-0.2413	8	9		11	2		46	40.746	2014.5	23	20.373
779	univ quebec	-0.0436	-0.2853	8	9		11	2		62	52.398	2014	31	26.199
868	world agrofor estry ctr	-0.6567	0.0441	6	9		9	2		24	0.7744	2009.5	12	0.3872
1	aarhus univ	-12.875	0.0263	10	8		8	2		40	41.624	2014	20	20.812
38	bangor univ	-0.013	0.0827	6	8		8	2		63	34.393	2013	31.5	17.197
590	unep world conserv at monitor	-0.5115	0.0195	6	8		8	2		244	138.721	2014	122	6.936

	ing ctr													
279	inst pesquis a ambient al amazon ia	0.658	0.1472	3	7		10	2		264	84.255	2010	132	42.128
355	meteo france	-0.172	-0.349	8	7		9	2		63	53.777	2014	31.5	26.889
449	oregon state univ	-0.2216	-0.1059	2	7		7	2		31	19.425	2015.5	15.5	0.9712
730	univ minnes ota	0.0963	0.2682	1	7		7	2		19	129.802	2016.5	9.5	64.901
736	univ munich	-0.0123	0.0733	6	7		7	2		62	33.643	2012	31	16.822
822	univ wageni ngen & res ctr	-0.5037	-0.1635	2	7		7	2		257	110.833	2009.5	128.5	55.417
5	acuaria nacl cuba	15.423	-0.3137	7	6		10	2		0	0	2017.5	0	0
135	ctr invest & serv ambient ales ecovida	15.427	-0.3141	7	6		10	2		0	0	2017.5	0	0
138	ctr nacl areas	15.426	-0.3133	7	6		10	2		0	0	2017.5	0	0

	protegi das													
278	inst oceanol	1.543	-0.3137	7	6		10	2		0	0	2017.5	0	0
753	univ nova lisboa	0.0263	-0.2166	8	6		6	2		49	23.585	2012.5	24.5	11.792
806	univ tecn lisboa	-0.1552	-0.2417	2	6		6	2		32	26.445	2015	16	13.223
3	acad sci czech republic	-1.089	-0.1184	10	5		6	2		13	0.8146	2013	6.5	0.4073
10	aix marseill e univ	-0.1975	-0.3551	8	5		5	2		22	46.702	2016	11	23.351
23	ashoka trust res ecol & environ m	-0.3315	-0.227	2	5		5	2		159	98.932	2013.5	79.5	49.466
33	australi an res council	0.2511	-0.2545	14	5		5	2		6	0.8276	2015	3	0.4138
88	cirad	-0.2088	-0.3014	8	5		5	2		11	0.6893	2015.5	5.5	0.3446
91	cnr	-0.4057	-0.249	2	5		5	2		171	125.213	2014	85.5	62.607
156	dept pk & wildlife	0.4737	-0.0194	9	5		6	2		19	10.802	2014	9.5	0.5401
242	ieb	-0.1155	0.2611	1	5		5	2		25	15.665	2013	12.5	0.7832
521	silliman univ	-0.0495	0.4235	13	5		5	2		5	42.274	2016	2.5	21.137
844	us fish	-0.1755	-0.074	2	5		5	2		45	27.384	2013.5	22.5	13.692

	& wildlife serv													
870	world bank	0.2245	0.3322	1	5		5	2		129	47.091	2013	64.5	23.545
22	arp	-11.405	-0.1079	10	4		6	2		15	0.9399	2013	7.5	0.4699
29	australian inst marine sci	0.2133	-0.2822	14	4		6	2		20	27.586	2015	10	13.793
76	chair iucn ssc invas species specialis t grp	-11.405	-0.1081	10	4		6	2		15	0.9399	2013	7.5	0.4699
105	conserv at sci partner s inc	0.728	0.1283	11	4		5	2		11	33.147	2016.5	5.5	16.574
112	cornell univ	0.1636	-0.2773	14	4		4	2		23	41.742	2015.5	11.5	20.871
125	csiro ecosyst sci	0.8656	-0.1929	5	4		4	2		6	0.3282	2013	3	0.1641
235	hokkaido univ	-0.1049	0.4669	13	4		5	2		4	0.2274	2015.5	2	0.1137
308	james cook univ aims jcu	0.2133	-0.282	14	4		6	2		20	27.586	2015	10	13.793
358	michigan state	0.129	0.2724	1	4		5	2		79	141.923	2013	39.5	70.962



	univ													
491	rhodes univ	0.6298	-0.1407	5	4		4	2		64	1.21	2009.5	32	0.605
498	rspb	-0.2726	-0.1399	2	4		4	2		29	4	2016.5	14.5	2
656	univ edinbur gh	-0.7436	0.0722	6	4		4	2		22	16.922	2010.5	11	0.8461
689	univ granada	-0.3051	-0.2391	2	4		4	2		6	15.789	2016	3	0.7895
714	univ leeds	-0.6566	-0.0734	2	4		4	2		118	29.758	2010.5	59	14.879
799	univ stellenb osch	0.6299	-0.1404	5	4		4	2		59	0.9386	2011	29.5	0.4693
245	imperial coll london	0.7013	0.0655	3	3		3	2		12	38.361	2016	6	19.181
357	metsah allitus pk & wildlife finland	-17.065	-0.1861	12	3		3	2		1	0.6832	2017	0.5	0.3416
429	no arizona univ	0.7162	0.1186	11	3		3	2		3	20.495	2017	1.5	10.248
475	protect ed areas & wildlife bur	0.7651	0.0533	11	3		6	2		52	29.563	2014	26	14.782
616	univ basque country	-0.3453	-0.2472	2	3		3	2		61	26.801	2013.5	30.5	1.34

706	univ jyvaskyl a	-17.406	-0.1908	12	3		3	2		39	12.447	2013.5	19.5	0.6223
708	univ kent	-0.2109	0.021	1	3		3	2		11	17.677	2015.5	5.5	0.8838
768	univ philippi nes	0.7652	0.0536	11	3		6	2		52	29.563	2014	26	14.782
811	univ toronto	11.487	-0.1824	7	3		3	2		43	12.037	2011	21.5	0.6018
140	curtin univ	0.6164	0.0144	3	2		2	2		0	0	2016.5	0	0
266	inst ecol ac	1.606	-0.368	7	2		2	2		12	27.569	2014.5	6	13.784
378	museo ecuatori ano ciencias nat	16.355	-0.376	7	2		2	2		7	0.815	2014	3.5	0.4075
549	swiss fed res inst wsl	-0.2144	-0.4292	9	2		2	2		62	26.906	2012.5	31	13.453
737	univ murcia	-13.738	0.0297	10	2		3	2		23	18.175	2014	11.5	0.9088
774	univ pompeu fabra	-13.738	0.0297	10	2		3	2		23	18.175	2014	11.5	0.9088
834	univ wyomin g	-0.1863	-0.0805	2	2		3	2		58	16.848	2011.5	29	0.8424
853	vrije univ amsterd	-15.446	-0.1664	12	2		2	2		88	47.465	2011.5	44	23.732

	am													
860	wildern ess soc	0.7379	0.1363	11	2		2	2		16	67.306	2016.5	8	33.653
164	east china normal univ	0.2559	0.5018	1	1		1	2		5	34.158	2016.5	2.5	17.079
233	heriot watt univ	-0.7533	0.0729	6	1		1	2		21	23.183	2014.5	10.5	11.592
264	inst ecol	16.429	-0.3779	7	1		1	2		5	0.6897	2015.5	2.5	0.3448
356	metsah allitus	-18.608	-0.204	12	1		2	2		47	17.157	2011	23.5	0.8579
415	natl taiwan univ	0.8777	-0.1969	5	1		1	2		7	0.398	2014	3.5	0.199
433	northea st forestry univ	0.2565	0.5021	1	1		2	2		15	1.096	2014.5	7.5	0.548
443	ohio state univ	0.0112	0.2687	1	1		1	2		10	0.2358	2009.5	5	0.1179
450	ostrobo thnia nat heritage serv	-18.608	-0.2037	12	1		1	2		44	10.452	2009.5	22	0.5226
546	swedish univ agr sci slu	-17.521	-0.1924	12	1		1	2		52	46.657	2013	26	23.329
596	univ aberdee	-0.9281	0.2255	4	1		2	2		3	0.7895	2016	1.5	0.3947

	n													
619	univ belgrade	-0.4881	0.5718	13	1		1	2		1	0.6832	2017.5	0.5	0.3416
666	univ fed goias reg jatai	29.598	0.3939	15	1		1	2		0	0	2017.5	0	0
673	univ fed parana	29.597	0.3935	15	1		1	2		7	47.822	2016.5	3.5	23.911
676	univ fed rio grande do sul	29.595	0.3937	15	1		2	2		25	33.003	2015.5	12.5	16.501
686	univ ghent	-0.7681	-0.0099	2	1		1	2		32	0.9602	2011	16	0.4801
694	univ hamburg	-15.519	-0.1674	12	1		1	2		7	0.1414	2012.5	3.5	0.0707
720	univ los andes	-0.8186	0.1394	4	1		1	2		36	10.571	2011.5	18	0.5286
785	univ rey juan carlos	-0.4194	-0.2898	2	1		1	2		68	12.776	2007	34	0.6388
788	univ roma tre	-0.2158	-0.4342	9	1		1	2		43	15.605	2010.5	21.5	0.7803
793	univ sassari	0.2565	0.5014	1	1		1	2		17	20.437	2014	8.5	10.219

Table 2: Countries

id	label	x	y	cluster	weight<Links>	weight<Total link strength>	weight<Documents>	weight<Citations>	weight<Norm. citations>	score<Avg. pub. year>	score<Avg. citations>	score<Avg. norm. citations>
90	usa	0.6069	0.0422	10	57	259	259	9287	337.07	20.130.734	358.571	13.014
22	england	-0.0881	0.3217	5	60	261	133	3390	1.779.436	20.132.456	263.246	15.609
2	australia	0.0411	0.2527	13	44	151	104	3174	1.367.672	20.133.365	305.192	13.151
12	canada	0.3047	-0.1081	6	28	79	75	1464	890.468	20.131.733	19.52	11.873
27	germany	-0.2897	-0.1677	2	41	118	58	743	624.754	2.014.069	128.103	10.772
62	peoples r china	0.4719	0.5415	11	20	53	49	654	829.305	20.151.633	133.469	16.925
9	brazil	0.0942	-0.4896	1	14	32	44	696	447.909	20.152.273	158.182	1.018
80	spain	-0.3415	-0.4615	9	25	61	42	1123	585.036	20.144.762	267.381	13.929
39	italy	-0.4518	-0.0952	8	31	78	37	681	645.325	20.141.351	184.054	17.441
26	france	-0.3893	0.1605	7	36	103	34	1362	628.569	20.135.588	400.588	18.487
78	south africa	-0.2855	0.5883	5	24	72	33	1650	570.967	20.111.818	50	17.302
54	netherlands	-0.1596	-0.1624	8	32	89	30	626	398.527	2013.8	208.667	13.284
25	finland	-0.656	-0.0004	3	22	57	28	876	450.896	2014.5	312.857	16.103
83	switzerland	-0.7374	0.2798	7	30	70	28	683	533.925	20.143.214	243.929	19.069
49	mexico	0.1962	-0.4219	1	13	26	22	788	271.711	20.115.909	358.182	12.351
72	scotland	-0.2865	0.3882	8	21	42	19	389	211.998	20.135.263	204.737	11.158

19	denmark	-0.6068	-0.0307	3	23	61	18	926	299.504	20.121.667	514.444	16.639
40	japan	10.279	-0.5926	4	12	19	18	193	13.938	20.152.778	107.222	0.7743
66	portugal	-0.703	-0.4846	15	15	31	17	633	457.899	20.146.471	372.353	26.935
5	belgium	-0.2451	-0.0877	3	29	56	14	406	222.969	20.132.143	29	15.926
34	indonesia	0.314	0.0462	6	14	28	13	307	161.652	20.134.615	236.154	12.435
3	austria	-0.4194	-0.4962	2	15	19	11	81	181.891	20.147.273	73.636	16.536
55	new zealand	0.6511	0.067	6	11	23	11	172	107.136	20.146.364	156.364	0.974
68	romania	-0.7356	-0.6082	9	12	15	11	59	51.859	20.150.909	53.636	0.4714
82	sweden	-0.5523	-0.0984	3	20	26	11	206	106.391	20.148.182	187.273	0.9672
1	argentina	0.2817	-0.5424	1	10	12	9	56	35.462	20.142.222	62.222	0.394
13	chile	0.2229	-0.4728	1	9	10	9	33	130.068	20.161.111	36.667	14.452
33	india	0.5843	0.4904	12	12	16	8	115	64.789	2014.5	14.375	0.8099
42	kenya	0.1391	0.5981	11	15	31	8	288	100.194	2.011.125	36	12.524
14	colombia	0.3275	-0.3884	1	12	15	7	118	4.501	20.141.429	168.571	0.643
58	norway	-0.3889	0.0566	3	22	32	7	200	215.583	20.154.286	285.714	30.798
4	bangladesh	10.798	-0.648	4	3	4	6	24	62.967	2015	4	10.494
18	czech republic	-0.6062	-0.3548	2	19	21	6	66	68.897	20.138.333	11	11.483

28	greece	-0.6476	-0.6184	9	7	8	6	43	29.301	2014.5	71.667	0.4884
31	hungary	-0.518	-0.5043	2	8	8	6	57	88.251	2015	9.5	14.708
53	nepal	0.5341	0.3609	12	8	10	6	41	41.212	20.158.333	68.333	0.6869
64	philippines	0.4477	0.0917	1	9	14	6	113	80.026	20.123.333	188.333	13.338
69	russia	-0.4733	-0.5401	2	6	8	6	6	163.171	20.156.667	1	27.195
79	south korea	10.772	-0.2758	4	7	9	6	131	29.149	20.136.667	218.333	0.4858
15	costa rica	0.3659	0.0025	1	7	10	5	30	57.215	2015.8	6	11.443
37	ireland	-0.4723	0.3267	8	9	16	5	175	69.286	2012.8	35	13.857
65	poland	-0.6958	-0.2941	3	17	23	5	80	64.058	2012.4	16	12.812
86	thailand	11.352	-0.6414	4	4	5	5	32	1.82	2013.6	6.4	0.364
7	bolivia	0.2546	-0.5369	1	5	5	4	39	13.914	2013	9.75	0.3478
21	egypt	-0.2752	-0.5127	2	6	8	4	41	39.856	2014.75	10.25	0.9964
63	peru	0.3704	-0.2291	1	10	11	4	49	65.814	2015.25	12.25	16.453
73	serbia	-0.5077	-0.5272	2	3	3	4	10	4.601	2015	2.5	11.502
74	singapore	0.1777	0.4744	13	11	17	4	198	19.668	2014.5	49.5	4.917
93	wales	-0.463	0.3734	8	7	11	4	169	44.193	2010.75	42.25	11.048
11	cameroon	-0.0461	-0.1824	6	6	7	3	59	22.367	20.126.667	196.667	0.7456
35	iran	-0.8297	0.2251	7	3	3	3	2	0.4934	20.173.333	0.6667	0.1645
46	lithuania	-0.686	-0.1589	3	15	16	3	35	31.293	2015	116.667	10.431
57	north ireland	-0.3078	0.7411	14	5	6	3	49	26.569	20.136.667	163.333	0.8856
71	saudi arabia	-0.093	-0.4928	2	8	11	3	33	97.721	20.153.333	11	32.574
84	taiwan	-0.0453	0.8693	5	4	5	3	55	34.448	2014	183.333	11.483
85	tanzania	-0.2861	0.6482	14	10	11	3	42	30.356	20.153.333	14	10.119

										3		
91	vietnam	0.5709	0.4442	12	6	6	3	60	32.643	20.136.667	20	10.881
6	benin	0.5954	0.6893	11	1	1	2	5	0.2435	2014.5	2.5	0.1218
20	ecuador	0.4001	-0.2998	1	5	5	2	20	14.757	2015	10	0.7378
32	iceland	-0.781	-0.6504	9	1	1	2	10	0.2165	2013.5	5	0.1082
43	kuwait	0.6265	0.5253	12	1	1	2	2	0.0433	2013.5	1	0.0216
45	latvia	-0.7086	-0.2321	3	16	19	2	27	3.874	2016	13.5	1.937
47	madagascar	-0.3128	0.7576	14	4	4	2	21	0.8971	2012.5	10.5	0.4486
48	malaysia	10.929	-0.6532	4	2	2	2	10	23.259	2015.5	5	11.629
51	myanmar	0.2762	0.5365	13	3	4	2	22	10.716	2015	11	0.5358
56	nicaragua	0.3176	-0.4097	1	5	6	2	65	0.8673	2012	32.5	0.4337
67	rep of georgia	-0.9965	0.3924	7	1	1	2	0	0	2016	0	0
89	uganda	0.807	0.898	10	3	5	2	2	12.317	2017.5	1	0.6159
8	botswana	17.206	0.2115	10	1	1	1	0	0	2017	0	0
10	byelarus	0.3664	0.7013	11	3	3	1	7	0.5165	2014	7	0.5165
16	croatia	-0.6772	-0.6299	9	4	4	1	16	0.5283	2011	16	0.5283
23	estonia	-0.6903	-0.1543	3	15	15	1	25	26.423	2015	25	26.423
24	fiji	0.6027	0.0705	6	6	6	1	83	2.999	2012	83	2.999
30	honduras	0.3337	-0.5707	1	3	3	1	2	0.066	2011	2	0.066
36	iraq	-0.3027	14.223	5	1	1	1	0	0	2017	0	0
41	jordan	17.311	0.138	10	1	1	1	0	0	2018	0	0
44	laos	11.479	-0.6459	4	3	3	1	3	0.7401	2016	3	0.7401
50	morocco	-0.804	-0.5546	15	1	1	1	10	0.4871	2013	10	0.4871
52	namibia	-0.402	0.937	5	2	2	1	1	0.6159	2017	1	0.6159
60	pakistan	0.0597	0.9999	13	2	2	1	0	0	2015	0	0
70	rwanda	11.267	-0.2795	4	2	2	1	6	0.2922	2013	6	0.2922
75	slovakia	-0.5671	-0.4881	2	2	2	1	10	24.668	2016	10	24.668



77	solomon islands	-0.7807	0.4766	7	2	2	1	6	0.6341	2015	6	0.6341
81	swaziland	-0.6699	0.4462	5	3	3	1	3	0.7401	2016	3	0.7401
87	trinidad & tobago	0.604	0.0696	6	6	6	1	83	2.999	2012	83	2.999
88	tunisia	-0.6577	0.3225	7	1	1	1	77	16.667	2010	77	16.667
94	yemen	-0.4459	-0.1914	8	2	2	1	31	0.4679	2007	31	0.4679

Table 3: Pearson correlations

Country	Articles	%of territory is a PA	GDP (million \$)	%GDP in RD
USA	449	26,3	19390604,00	2,74
UK	153	22,3	2622433,00	1,68
Australia	125	28,6	1323421,00	1,87
Canada	120	6,5	1653042,00	1,53
Germany	78	38,7	3677439,00	2,94
China	59	15,9	12237700,00	2,1
Spain	53	15,2	1311920,00	1,19
Italy	59	13,3	1934797,00	1,29
Brazil	47	20,7	2055505,00	
France	42	26,1	2582501,00	2,23
South Africa	42	13	349419,00	2,45
Switzerland	40	9,7	678887,00	3,374
Netherlands	36	17,9	826200,00	2,03
Finland	30	14,2	251884,00	2,74
Mexico	23	6,8	1149118,00	0,487
Japan	22	2,1	4872136,00	3,14
Sweden	19	12,9	538040,00	3,25

Austria	18	28,4	416595,00	1,88
Denmark	18	17,8	324871,00	2,87
Portugal	18	9,1	217571,00	1,26
Belgium	17	24,6	492681,00	2,48
New Zealand	16	30,5	205853	1,26
Argentina	15	7,5	637590,00	0,53
Chile	13	13,6	277056,00	0,36
Correlation CD	0,278913			
Correlation CE	0,803203			
Correlation CF	0,163882			

## APPENDIX 2 – ALL RESEARCH RECORDS INDEXED IN PARKFORSCHUNG.CH

Protected Area	Research records	Research title	Publications	Principal investigator
Regional Nature Park Biosfera Val Mustair	5	Impacts of climate change on the tourism business in the winter season in the Swiss National Park region	1) Stan, Valentin. 2016. Climate change in the Swiss National Park region: Impacts of climate change on the tourism business in winter season in the Swiss National Park region. Masterthesis, HTW Chur.	Nikitin, Ivan
		Empfindlichkeit von Quell-Lebensgemeinschaften gegenüber Klimaveränderungen in den Alpen	1) Küry D., Lubini V. & Stucki P. 2016: Temperature patterns and factors governing thermal response in high elevation springs of the Swiss Central Alps. Hydrobiologia DOI 10.1007/s10750-016-2918-0. 2) Küry D., Lubini V. & Stucki P. 2016: Empfindlichkeit von Quell-Lebensgemeinschaften gegenüber Klimaveränderungen in den Alpen. Projekt-Schlussbericht, 42 S.	Küry, Daniel
		Klima- und Bestandesgeschichte im Arvenurwald God da Tamangur	Not available	Stoffel, Markus
		Prognostizierte Effekte des Klimawandels auf Indikatorarten für strukturelle und biologische Diversität im Gebirgswald	Not available	Bollmann, Kurt
		Wie wirkt sich der Klimawandel auf die Verbreitung des Schneehasen ( <i>Lepus timidus</i> ) in klimatisch unterschiedlichen Regionen der Schweiz aus?	Not available	Rehnus, Maik
Regional Nature Park Gruyère Pays-d'Enhaut	1	Les narcisses et le réchauffement climatique	Not available	Randine, Cristophe

<b>Regional Nature Park Jura Vaudois</b>	1	Impact des Changements de Gestion et des Changements Climatiques sur les Pâturages Boisés d'altitude (MOUNTLAND)	Not available	Buttler, Alexandre
<b>Regional Nature Park Pfyn-Finges</b>	1	Record of Past Environmental and Climatic Changes in the Sediment Record of Lake Pfafforet (Valais, Switzerland)	1) Straub, Marietta. 2008. Record of Past Environmental and Climatic Changes in the Sediment Record of Lake Pfafforet. Diplomarbeit, ETH Zürich. 2) Straub, M.; Anselmetti, F.; Wick, L. Die Sedimente des Pfafforetsees (Pfynwald). <i>archaeologia vallesiana</i> 4.	Anselmetti, Flavio
<b>Swiss Alps Jungfrau-Aletsch UNESCO World Heritage</b>	3	Contributions to the knowledge of alpine bird communities with special reference to the climatic constraints	1) Frey, M., (1989): Brutbiologie des Hänflings unter den Einflüssen des Gebirgsklimas. <i>Orn. Beob.</i> 86: 265-289  2) Glutz von Blotzheim, U. (1966): Handbuch der Vögel Mitteleuropas. Aula Verlag, Wiesbaden. Vol. 13 in print Glutz von Blotzheim, U. (1987): Verbreitung, Siedlungsdichte und Brutbiologie der Vögel des Urserentales, insbesondere der Lorbeerweiden-Gesellschaft zwischen Realp und Hospental. <i>Orn. Beob.</i> 84: 249-274.  3) Glutz von Blotzheim, U. (1990): Avifauna von Windwurfflächen (Sturmschadenflächen) im Tannen-Buchenwaldareal am Schwyzer Nordalpenrand. Typoskript.  4) Glutz von Blotzheim, U. (1992): Avifauna des Obergoms, insbesondere des Rhonegletschervorfeldes. Typoskript.  5) Heiniger, Ph.H. (1991):	Glutz, Urs

			<p>Anpassungsstrategien des Schnefinkren an die extremen Umweltbedingungen des Hochgebirges. Orn. Beob. 88: 193-207</p> <p>6) Luder, R. (1993): Vogelbestände und -lebensräume in der Gemeinde Lenk (Berner Oberland): Veränderungen im Laufe von 12 Jahren. Orn. Beob. 90: 1-34</p> <p>Schaffner, U. (1990): Die Avifauna des Naturwaldreservates Combe-Grède. Orn. Beob. 87: 107-129</p>	
		Stakeholder Responses to Climate Change in the Swiss Alps	Hill, M., Wallner, A., Furtado, J. 2010. Reducing vulnerability to climate change in the Swiss Alps: a study of adaptive planning. Climate Policy 10:70-86	Wallner, Astrid
		Klimabedingte Veränderung des saisonalen Abflussverhaltens alpiner Einzugsgebiete in der Schweizer Alpen und Südalpen Neuseelands	Studer, Christian (2014): Klimabedingte Veränderung des saisonalen Abflussverhaltens alpiner Einzugsgebiete in der Schweizer Alpen und Südalpen Neuseelands. Masterarbeit, Universität Bern.	Weingartner, Rolf
<b>Swiss National Park</b>	13 (+2 elder climate monitoring, in blue)	Impacts of climate change on the tourism business in the winter season in the Swiss National Park region	1) Stan, Valentin. 2016. Climate change in the Swiss National Park region: Impacts of climate change on the tourism business in winter season in the Swiss National Park region. Masterthesis, HTW Chur.	Nikitin, Ivan

		Empfindlichkeit von Quell-Lebensgemeinschaften gegenüber Klimaveränderungen in den Alpen	1) Kury D., Lubini V. & Stucki P. 2016: Temperature patterns and factors governing thermal response in high elevation springs of the Swiss Central Alps. <i>Hydrobiologia</i> DOI 10.1007/s10750-016-2918-0. 2) Kury D., Lubini V. & Stucki P. 2016: Empfindlichkeit von Quell-Lebensgemeinschaften gegenüber Klimaveränderungen in den Alpen. Projekt-Schlussbericht, 42 S.	Kury, Daniel
		Klima- und Bestandesgeschichte im Arvenurwald God da Tamangur	Not available	Stoffel, Markus
		Prognostizierte Effekte des Klimawandels auf Indikatorarten für strukturelle und biologische Diversität im Gebirgswald	Not available	Bollmann, Kurt
		Wie wirkt sich der Klimawandel auf die Verbreitung des Schneehasen ( <i>Lepus timidus</i> ) in klimatisch unterschiedlichen Regionen der Schweiz aus?	Not available	Rehnus, Maik

	Erdstrombewegungen und Klimamessungen am Munt Chavagl (Schweizerischer Nationalpark; Dauerprojekt)	<p>1) Gamper, M., 1981: Heutige Solifluktionsbeträge von Erdströmen. <i>Ergebn. der wiss. Unters. im Schweiz. Nationalpark</i>, Heft 79</p> <p>2) Gamper, M., 1983: Controls and rates of movement of solifluction lobes in the Eastern Swiss Alps. In: <i>Permafrost: Fourth Intern. Conference, Proceedings</i>, 328-333</p> <p>3) Gamper, M., 1987: Mikroklima und Solifluktion. <i>Resultate von Messungen im Schweizerischen Nationalpark in den Jahren 1975-1985</i>.</p> <p>4) Gamper, M., 1981: Heutige Solifluktionsbeträge von Erdströmen und klimamorphologische Interpretation fossiler Böden. <i>Diss. Univ. Zürich</i>.</p> <p>5) Keller, F., 2017: <i>Periglazialforschung im Schweizerischen Nationalpark. Bericht über die Klima- und Erdstrommessungen am Munt Chavagl von September 2015-August 2016. Wissenschaftliche Nationalparkkommission. Academia Engiadina, Samedan.</i></p>	Keller, Felix
	Klimamessnetz SNP	Not available	Konzelmann, Thomas
	Waldgrenzverschiebungen zwischen 1899 und 2008 im Gebiet des Schweizerischen Nationalparks (unter besonderer Berücksichtigung des Klimawandels)	Berger S 2013: <i>Waldflächenveränderungen im Schweizerischen Nationalpark zwischen 1899 und 2008. Masterarbeit Geographisches Institut Universität Basel.</i>	Kuhn, Nikolaus Josef

		Lokalklimatische Untersuchungen am Fuornbach (Ova dal Fuorn) und am Spöl	Lüdi W. (1966): Lokalklimatische Untersuchungen am Fuornbach (Ova dal Fuorn) und am Spöl. <i>Ergebn. der wiss. Unters. im schweiz. Nationalpark</i> ,56	Lüdi, Walter
		Klimaänderung und Tourismuspotential (Dilpom Ketterer)	Ketterer C 2009: Klimatisches Tourismuspotential des Engadins auf der Grundlage von Messungen und regionalen Klimasimulationen. Masterarbeit, Universität Freiburg im Breisgau	Matzarakis, Andreas
		Climatic and topographic effects on mortality processes of mountain pine in the Swiss National Park	1) Bigler, C. and Rigling, (A. 2013): Precision and accuracy of tree-ring-based death dates of mountain pines in the Swiss National Park. <i>Trees - Structure and Function</i> 27:1703-1712. 2) Bigler, C. (2016): Trade-offs between growth rate, tree size and lifespan of mountain pine ( <i>Pinus montana</i> ) in the Swiss National Park. <i>PLoS One</i> 11 (3):e0150402. doi:10.1371/journal.pone.0150402	Bigler, Christof
		Bilan des 8 premières années du monitoring des étangs de Macun (Parc National Suisse): évolution de la biodiversité aquatique et relation avec le réchauffement climatique	Dalmard A-C 2011: Bilan des 8 premières années du monitoring des étangs de Macun (Parc National Suisse): évolution de la biodiversité aquatique et relation avec le réchauffement climatique. HEPIA Lullier (Betreuung: B. Oertli)	Oertli, Beat



		Geometry of the last glacial maximum (LGM) in the Swiss Alps and its paleoclimatological significance	Florineth, D. 1998: Geometry of the last glacial maximum (LGM) in the Swiss Alps and its paleoclimatological significance. Dissertation, Geologisches Institut Universität Bern.	Schlüchter, Christian
		Climate-driven range dynamics and potential current disequilibrium in Alpine vegetation	1) Rumpf, S., et al. 2018. Range dynamics of mountain plants decrease with elevation. In: Proceedings of the US Academy of Sciences (PNAS). 115 (8), 1848-1853. 2) 6th Symposium for Research in Protected Areas, 2 to 3 November 2017, Faculty of Natural Sciences, University of Salzburg, Austria: RUMPF, S.B., HÜLBER, K., ZIMMERMANN, N.E. & DULLINGER, S.: Climate-driven range dynamics and 559 potential current disequilibrium in Alpine vegetation	Dullinger, Stefan
		Lokalklimatische Untersuchungen in Waldgesellschaften Microclimate of forest stands	Pallmann H., Frei E. (1943): Lokalklimate einiger Waldgesellschaften. Ergebn. der Wiss. Unters. im Schweiz. Nationalpark, Bd. 12, Liefg.1	Pallmann, Hans
<b>Swiss Tectonic Arena Sardona UNESCO World Heritage</b>	1	ClimAlpTour - Climate Change and its Impact on Tourism in the Alpine Space. Pilotregion Heidiland/Pizol	Clivaz, C., Doctor, M., Gessner, S., Ketterer, L., Luthe, T., Schuckert, M., Siegrist, D., Wyss, R. (2012). Adaptionstrategien des Tourismus an den Klimawandel in den Alpen. Ergebnisse des alpenweiten Projekts ClimAlpTour in der Schweiz. Schriftenreihe des Instituts für Landschaft und Freiraum. HSR Hochschule für Technik Rapperswil, Nr. 8. Rapperswil.	Siegrist, Dominik

<b>UNESCO Biosphere Entlebuch</b>	3	HydroServ - Vulnerability of hydrological ecosystem services: Integrative analysis under changes of climate and socio-economy with an emphasis on adaptation	Lietha J. (2011): Rivalität in der Landnutzung. Nachhaltigkeitsanalyse des institutionellen Ressourcenregimes im Skigebiet Sörenberg. Masterthesis, IRL, ETH Zürich.	Grêt-Regamey, Adrienne
		Moorhabitats der UNESCO Biosphäre Entlebuch im Wandel des Klimas	SCHMIDT Chantal, u.a., 2016: Moorhabitats der UNESCO Biosphäre Entlebuch im Wandel des Klimas. Inter- und Transdisziplinäre Projektarbeit Nachhaltige Entwicklung. CDE, Universität Bern	Hammer, Thomas
		Klimaneutrale Energieversorgung in der UNESCO Biosphäre Entlebuch - Die regionale Umsetzung der Energiestrategie 2050 mit Fokus auf die CO <sub>2</sub> -Emissionen	Bürgi, M. (2015): Klimaneutrale Energieversorgung in der UNESCO Biosphäre Entlebuch - Die regionale Umsetzung der Energiestrategie 2050 mit Fokus auf die CO <sub>2</sub> -Emissionen. Masterarbeit. FHNW, Hochschule für Life Sciences.	Lüscher, Claude
<b>UNESCO Biosphärenreservat Engiadina Val Müstair</b>	1	A resurvey of millipede diversity in the Swiss National Park and its surroundings: Comparison of data from 1919 with 2018	Not available	Baur, Bruno
<b>Wildnispark Zurich</b>	1(+1 elder research project, in blue)	Jährliche Variabilität der Frühholzgefässe: ein klimatisches Signal?	Not available	Fonti, Patrick
		Die Klimaverhältnisse des Albisgebietes	Lüdi W. & Stüssi B. Die Klimaverhältnisse des Albisgebietes. Geobotanisches Institut Zürich, Heft 18.	Schmidt, Ronald

## APPENDIX 3– INTERVIEWS IN ORIGINAL TRANSCRIPTION

Thomas Hammer (11.01.2018)

**What the main focus and the scope of your research on climate change and moorlands in the UBE are?**

It is a project on changing moorlands in climate change and the measure to take.

**Analyzing the thematic composition of the research carried on in the Swiss protected areas, climate change cannot be depicted as a primary object of interest (outside of SNP). The Entlebuch configures an exception to the general trend, with your research. What did trigger your interest in this scientific endeavor?**

Cc is a driver of moorland landscape change, work of some students before. Climate change will harm those residual landscapes that are very peripheral and not quite iconic as Scottish moorlands or German moorlands. They have a value as near natural – cultural landscape, but they are really small in size and don't count as important carbon sink. They are residual landscape (90% of them are gone) and are conserved most of all for ecological reasons. Only a part of moorland landscape are high mire, that are important records of environmental change. In relation to climate change, they will be affected in their ecological equilibrium.

**Q: In the international discourse moorlands are regarded as both carbon sink and climate change “victims”, since they are affected by climate change in a way that is not exactly clear at this point. Science is not completely settled. We need more studies and more data, but still, I would like to understand how this changes happening on an ecological level can be reflected on a cultural dimension?**

In Switzerland we want to save the cultural function of this landscapes as beautiful landscapes, extensively used landscape ,landscapes for recreation for their aesthetic value.

**Q: Moorland landscapes are scattered through all the Swiss territory and the UBE represents the only “cluster” (density-wise) for this kind of biotopes. Since climate change is expected to shift the distribution ranges - both in latitude and altitude – of the species and fragmented or isolated patches of landscape are going to suffer the most, do you think the UBE will gain more importance in the future, in virtue of the concentration of moors and wetlands it hosts?**

In Switzerland moorlands are really fragmented and Entlebuch should play – and can play – a more central role in virtue of the concentration of this kind of landscapes and biotopes it hosts.

**Q: Moorlands are landscapes sustaining different ecosystem services: carbon sequestration and storage, biodiversity protection, water regulation and aesthetic values. Climate change might be a threat to all these functions. Science can help to cope with these risks: setting monitoring initiative, informing policies and management practice and educating the general**

**public to the issues related to climate change for specific environments. What is the state of the cooperation between research and management of moorland landscapes?**

There is no general discourse around the moorlands, despite their status of protection. I am surprised too, since they are nationally protected. There are no important discussion going on, neither in science nor in society. It is a surprising thing. The high mires are few and small in size, while the flat mires are more extensive, but without the same value. Probably their extension and rarity, combined with their low iconic value, make them neglected in some way. Of course, we have the Alps as categorial landscape. I think we have no perception that this typical landscape exist in Switzerland. The Alps are extensive and always in the center of the discussion about landscape. We are far from the situation of Germany or Scotland, where moorlands are recognized as beautiful and iconic landscape.

**Q: we can say that the attention on moorlands is basically driven by aesthetic values?**

The only discussions going on are related to their aesthetic value and to the ecological value of the mires, but just on the biotope level, without consideration for the broader landscape of the moorlands. Probably the aesthetic value comes first and act as a driver, with the biological value coming at a second moment. We use the moorlands as advertising postcards. The flat mires have also an historical value for the study of historical agriculture, when they were set up. They are anyway a young landscape, not a primordial one.

**Q: Moorlands are increasingly appreciated landscapes. They have a strong iconic value and they are integral to famous narratives and novels – Emily Bronte’s *Wuthering Heights*, Conan Doyle’s *The Hound of the Baskervilles*, and even Mel Gibson’s movie *Braveheart*, just to name some – and they are at the center of different conservation initiatives. In the UBE an excursion trail has been set up for the wide appreciation of these landscapes. Do you think climate change has the potential for harming the beauty of this landscapes, hence damaging their aesthetic-recreational value?**

Yes. For example the Entlebuch is affected by the dying trees, that are disturbing of the scenic view for tourists that cannot understand why the management didn’t to anything to eliminate the trees. Such natural processes were not understood by the general public and climate change is probably going to strengthen this kind of processes. The population has to adapt to another view of wilderness. Switzerland wilderness is produced and not pristine, and climate change is going to change some features of the landscape. Tourism has to adapt necessarily. Swiss policies regarding forest is now focused on letting things develop naturally.

**Q: so it is a matter of science communication to ensure tourists understand that those landscapes are not fixed and wilderness actually means to let “nature” be “nature”?**

Yes. Fifteen years ago the government of the cantons decided to manage the forests in this way. Before that moment, in the Swiss forests the ecological processes were managed in a way that eliminated the disturbances of the aesthetic value. Now even in the newspaper we see articles about the conservation

of natural processes as a key theme of conservation. Things has been changed. Also in agriculture, everything used to kept “in order”, now we have more awareness of ecological processes

**Q: So there is a growing awareness that ecological conservation is not always compatible with aesthetic value. Do research play a central role in this recognition?**

Yes. We have a research project from Marcel Hunziker, a Human Geographer, on the perception of landscape. They find out people perceive landscapes as beautiful if they are half-wild or at least not completely wild. This can be read as a sign of change probably.

**Q: And on the management side, is there awareness of the growing interest toward an equilibrium of aesthetic and ecological integrity as landscape values?**

The management of parks for example, in the Entlebuch it depends on the specialists available. In the Regional Parks they are not specialists of ecological processes. In the Entlebuch

**Q: it is interesting because this particular kind of PAs – the UNESCO Biosphere – should be at the front of the educational endeavor towards the general public.**

This conception is a good conception (the UB) but it hasn't taken an ecological turn. Regional parks don't have an ecological foundation or focus on biological processes. If it is a normative question: yes, they should work in this direction and create integrated projects of tourism and ecology. The Moorlandscape trail is an example, a first step.

**On a European scale, the UK is probably the country most involved in the conservation of the moors and their valorization. Some of the initiatives developed were designed to restore moorlands, even by means of forest clearances. Given the relative rarity of this landscape in the Swiss context, and the special constitutional protection they enjoy, can you envision a future trade-off scenario where novel moorlands are set-up at the expense of some forests or other, less rare, ecosystems?**

No. Switzerland is far from the British example. There are some projects of restoration of mires, but this are just small projects on the scale of the biotope and don't extend to the whole landscape. However, intervention aiming at the creation of novel moorland's ecosystems and landscapes are not actually happening.

**Moorlands has covered a lot of functions in history for human communities, reflecting the changes of the relationship between man and nature in different historical and geographical contexts. Nowadays, in the general discourse around moorland protection, it seems like two functions will be central to their future: the production of aesthetic value and the carbon sink activity. Do you think these properties are going to be the *raisons d'être* for the future of Swiss moorlands as well?**

In Switzerland forests play the role of carbon sinks in an international discourse. The aesthetic value will probably be the driving force in the future conservation. Even so, moorlands are so small in the

swiss context they will probably never be a tourism attractor. It could work on a local and peripheral scale, but not in a national view.

**Q: Can they be defined as a local-regional scale example of sustainability?**

Yes. If you take consideration of the international tourism promotion, the tourist don't go to the moorlands. They want to see the Matternhorn, they want to see Geneva, the Alps. They often take picture of the moorlands to attract international tourism, because they are fit well for promotion, but tourist don't go to the moorlands.

**Q: The Entlebuch is not known at the international level?**

They tried to attract international tourism. But it takes half a day and you have to walk a lot. Tourists don't have the time to stay in the moorlands, so just a small segment of them is attracted by the idea of hiking in the moorlands.

**Biological conservation is slowly moving towards a new model, focused more on the protection of natural processes and less on specific equilibria that have to be maintained in specific locations of the geographical space. Climate change is one of the phenomena responsible for this paradigmatic shift. The idea of an ecological continuum is tailored to allow the realisation of such a vision, where genes and species can flow within an interconnected landscape. Even if this model is coherent with the preservation of an ecologically functional landscape that allows species to migrate in response to changes, it poses some challenges for our relationship with the environment. What happens to cultural near-natural landscape like moorlands when they lose some of their distinctive species? Do they lose part of their identity with them? How the protection of such landscapes can fit into this new general model of conservation?**

This is a big discussion. We know we have to protect the habitats, but we can see that some of the species originally included in the habitat are moving out and others are moving in. The only solution is to be open. Habitats are changing, but still, they have to be protected, not just because they host one or two species, but as a fundamental part of the landscape. But what happens if habitats don't fulfil the criteria to retain legal protection? We don't have a solution in Switzerland, but just a discussion. Our proposition are to connect different biotopes and ecosystems. To connect habitats on local level, but also on a national level. We have to promote connectivity at each and every level

Patrick Kupper (17.01.2018)

**Q: One of the most interesting elements of the book is how you frame the problem of the rising of the SNP. In Creating Wilderness you are concerned with the description of a network of different actors involved in the creation and the management of the park operating on the background of the equilibrium ecology theory, that acted as an implicit (and sometimes explicit) driver for its evolution: a framework resembling some applications of Actor-Network theory in STS studies domain, since you map the interactions between scientists, local communities, ideas, managers, animals. I'm interested in using a similar framework in the**

**development of my research project. Are there any other examples in the literature employing these methods to similar research questions?**

Yes, the topic is quite relevant. My answer is that it depends. Two weeks ago I took part in radio interview about how climate change affects protected areas and the management policies. Of National Parks in particular. My answer is that it depends on what you are protecting, what are your goals. If the goal It's always about protecting the natural process, and that is indeed what they did in SNP in the beginning. What changed is the idea of a natural equilibrium that was the target. Basically now they want to understand processes while not disturbed by humans, but it is more open-ended. In the past [in the case of SNP], scientist got kind of frustrated because nothing happened: changes were so slow they needed years and years and years just to actually see small shifts. Probably with climate change it will be faster. Protected areas' goal is to conserve. If climate changes the habitats will change. They will have some problems out of this situation. To come back to your question I think there are always actors behind conservation goals. What nature conserve or develop and so on, that is really a very interesting research

**Q: The idea of “total protection” adopted by SNP has been amended few times in the history of the park, and I find of particular interest the case of the ibex and the red deer, where the former has been reintroduced into the park in virtue of its belonging to the historical climax community of the region, while the latter has been excluded due to the absence in such historically documented ecological balance. In the current climate change narrative, one of the most common topics is represented by the dichotomy between alien and native species, that is referring to a baseline-community pictured at a precise time. Even if not all alien species pose problems to the management of protected areas, alien invasive species are a serious threat to the composition of the species, and parks are trying to keep them away from their boundaries. On the basis of your reflections in “creating wilderness” about the total protection of SNP, and given the increasing effort to keep them under control, it is fair to say that the paradigm of no intervention is gradually becoming an outdated idea? And if this is the case, what made it so outdated?**

I don't think is a problem. It would be more problematic if someone take a car into the park and releases some species intentionally. It has been done in the past, with problematic species. They were happy to reintroduce the ibex with no regard for the reference baseline, but the as an opposite example the reintroduction of the red deer was, in a way, a socio-natural process, because they came back by themselves, but still they had to adapt the norms on hunting to cope with the new reality. I don't see much difference with climate change.

**Q: my point was exactly on the definition of “natural”. Where is the different between a deliberate reintroduction and an invasion triggered by an anthropogenically altered climate?**

I think intentionality is the difference. You can't control climate change. But again, in this socio-natural process is difficult to separate the social from the natural. Probably with another conservation concept it would be fine to introduce new species

**Q:** In the book, you mention the different biopolitics of foxes and chamois, where the firsts were objects of widespread shooting in order to prevent the diffusion of rabies, while the seconds were shot only if clearly sick during an outbreak of keratoconjunctivitis. Even if the parks had formal reasons to do so, this different treatment brings into consideration the status of charismatic species, i.e. iconic species, “valuable” species. These species are sometimes towering over the whole rationale of conservation because they are widely recognizable and their presence is considerate desirable. Climate change is now forcing some species to move in order to adapt to new climatic conditions, and an adaptation model based on ecological connectivity is designed to allow such migrations. But what happens when charismatic species migrate or go locally extinct? We are now aware that in the climate battle some species will come up as winners, while other will simply be lost, and in some way, this could be acceptable in a “natural processes” conservation model. But in the case of charismatic species, the problem could be much more complex, because of the social relevance they possess. Do you think that the future conservation in the alpine context might be guided not only by ecological rationality but also by “affective” attachment to these species?

I would expect so, yes. You mentioned the example of SNP. Extinction is a natural process and specific species conservation wasn't a target, but still the case of the Ibex broke out of the official paradigm of non-intervention with natural processes. There are limits to the concept and charismatic species are probably sitting at the edge. But the history of SNP has some other examples of the limits of this conception as a non-intervention spaces, like in the case of wildfire. It is interesting to explore where the concept gets intertwined with other dimensions. To map the border in order to understand where is the social limit, where the problem stops being scientific and starts being social.

**Q:** In Chapter 4, you said that total protection, even if informed by the initial paradigm of equilibrium ecology, stood the test of the creation of a “Grand Experiment”. The modern concepts of protection in the SNP, however, is more focused on the protection of the natural processes, once again excluding humans from intervention, even if this time the final goal is not to achieve a supposed state of natural equilibrium, but to ensure the protection of the motion in ecosystems' balance. Even in this case, climate-induced migrations (and sometimes local extinctions) are part of this moving balance, so they can be accepted according to this principle, in light of the fact that there is no more a climax community baseline reference to respect. But what happens when the single PA's *lassaiz faire* approach collides with the interest of the protection of biodiversity? Is possible to envision other kinds of “grand experiments” - spaces of science AND spaces of nature - like SNP in the Alps? Is the general conservation's priority of biodiversity protection too strong to allow the birth of new experiments?

This is a difficult question. I guess you could find other examples at rather small scales of this kind of experiments. The SNP is covering a relatively large scale and other examples in Europe are the Zapodekini in the USSR. The problem I see with this kind of conservation projects is that they can be not attractive to people outside of science. It is difficult to communicate. I think it is one of the main reasons we still have only one National Park. It doesn't generate as much money as projects of regional



development would do. I would be skeptical you will see many more examples. I guess there is potential, there are regions where depopulation already has happened that can be devoted to this kind of hypotheses testing, but probably on a different label than “National Park”, because it will attract a lot of people to see wilderness. Probably under another label you would attract less people. I think especially with regards to climate change, It would be interesting to see how this human induced natural dynamics occur from a science perspective. There is potential, but there are all kind of problems of social exclusion to face.

Laudo Albrecht (22.01.2018)

**1) Given your special point of view on a high-valued natural landscape, have you been able so far to track signs of climate change’s effects in the Aletsch region?**

We cannot say we have precise observations or scientific results of changing because of climate change. We think that there are actually changes. For example, we have the Black Grouse (*Tetrao tetrix*) and Rock Ptarmigan (*Lagopus mutus*) which are here in this regions (*Lagopus mutus* not in the forest but in this region). We can observe the tendency of the Tetrao of going higher, and also the *Lagopus mutus* is going higher. Then you have here the Great Aletsch Glacier, and here we have the end [of the glacier] but in 1860 the end of the glacier was here [points an higher spot on the map]. So you can see the glacier going back and back and back. This is normal, but the speed of the retreat is something new, and it is getting faster and faster. We think this is a very good evidence of climatic changes. This is one thing. And then the other thing you see now you have problems of stability [of the slopes]. On this side you can see the glacier and on the other the Aletschwald. The glacier is retreating and so the slopes became unstable, so you have landslides. In 2016, two years ago, we saw in this region a faster retreat: 80 cm per day. [points at the map] This [the retreat] will have consequences on the whole landscape and the PA. We think this is also related to climate change. With the retreating of the glacier the slopes became unstable. We had to install a structure against the instability of the slopes to protect our structure. I think this installation and the retreat of the glacier are the most visible signs of climate change.

**Q: so you said you don’t have any scientifically proven evidence of the effects of climate change**

We have some scientific material concerning the forest. This forest is 2000 m above sea level and process are happening very very slowly. Every 20 or 30 years we are making an inventory, counting the trees. But this timespan is almost irrelevant for such a forest, that is thousands of years old. So that needs a very long time to see changes

**Q: so you cannot say at the moment that you see evidences of change in the forest**

No. We can see changes, but not related to climate change. I can’t say there are no changes, but we just cannot see them right now.

**Q: The Aletsch is a “natural landscape” of international importance, labelled as UNESCO World Heritage site in virtue of “being an “outstanding example of the formation of the Alps”, hosting a “wide range of natural phenomena and processes” and being a site of “extraordinary natural beauty” (ProNatura Aletsch Center webpage). Climate change can’t affect the overall value of the region, but it could have effects on some of its components:**

**Q: The Aletschwald is a site of particular interest because of the composition of the species that forms its biocoenosis, with ancient *Pinus cembra* as the most important mark. Do you believe that changes in the future composition of the species due to climate change could represent a damage for the protected area?**

I don’t know. You have to speak with someone who is expert of the trees. I don’t think we are going to see significant changes in the next twenty-thirty years. Not only the temperature is important, but also how much snow and rain you have in the summer, how long is the winter, all the factors that are important for the trees, not only temperature. Normally we can see when you have raising in temperatures – three degrees or five as extremes temperatures – I think that we will have influences on the trees. Perhaps we will have more *Lepicea*, but *arolla* pine and *larix decidua* will stay here. In the higher zones we don’t have many trees at the moment, but probably forest will rise higher. But again, no scientific results, is just a guess.

**Q: So you can’t see ecological problems at the moment, nor damages to the iconicity of the Aletschwald**

Not concerning the diversity of the species, not at the moment. When you speak with experts, probably they will be focused on the future scenarios and might have some concerns. It would be normal that with higher temperatures you can have new plants coming in the areas, but we have no evidences now.

**b) The shrinking of the Aletsch Glacier is well documented in scientific literature, but what are the consequences of its melting for the future of tourism in the region? Do you think that climate change will affect not only the mass balance of the glacier, but also its iconic value as a cultural landmark of the Alps?**

[NOT ASKED]

**Q: What are the attitude towards climate-driven environmental change among tourist in the centre? Do you believe that climate change might be a curiosity-trigger event, attracting more interest around the region? And on the opposite, do you think that it could be harmful in the long term, in case of strong landscape changes?**

It is very difficult to say because we don’t have any study on tourist behavior. I can’t say precisely why they are coming to visit the region. We have – and I can’t claim to be scientific – the impression that there are a lot of people coming to see the Aletsch glacier until it is there. But the other reasons, I don’t know. I think visitors are generally more sensible for nature protection and so on. When I look at the whole region, that is called “Aletsch Arena”, then I don’t think climate change is an important reason for interest in the region. The people coming to visit us [the ProNatura Zentrum] are more sensible, perhaps these events are making other people more sensitive to climate change and the things which can happen, but I don’t think they are already. When we have people in our house we have many

school classes which are coming to camps. They stay from Monday to Friday, with guided excursion: for example, when we have excursions on the Aletsch Glacier we have discussions about climate change and how can we see climate change through the glacier, what are the reasons of climate change and so on, but people in the neighboring villages are just coming for holidays, not for discuss holiday. For the people who are coming to our center, we have discussion aimed to make them more sensitive to the problem. But we only have a small part of the visitor of the Aletsch Arena. In addition, also our tour are not focused just on climate change, but also on the natural beauty of the region in general.

**Q: so it is fair to say that in the future climate change will become even more central in your environmental education programmes?**

Yes, it will become more central, but that needs a lot of time. Our strategy for the future for example, we are now just about to make a new concept for energy in our centre, so energy and climate change will become more and more important even in our everyday work, not only for the forest. So we are trying to make people more sensitive even in this way. Even in times like this, with this weather we have now is full of extremes in temperatures, snowfalls, raining. It is something related to climate change, people in Zermatt don't have any problems with climate change at the moment. When they are at home, the problem is no more a problem.

**Q: One of the most heated debate in the American conservation community revolves around the idea of assisted migration as a mean to conserve species or communities at risk of extinction. Do you have a position in this debate? Do you think that “conserving nature” should be more focused on the preservation of the integrity of natural processes (like in the SNP) instead of preserving – for instance – particular processes in specific geographical locations?**

For us at the moment the policy is very clear: we let nature develop. Nature can develop, we are not influencing the development in some precise direction. When we see developments that are disturbing animals, for example, we normally don't think “what can we do to help”. Seeing the *Tetrao tetrix* going higher in this region, we let them adapt their behavior. We have problem with the red deer (*Cervus elaphus*). In winter they are here [points a spot on the map] and in summer here [points a spot on the map] and there are too many of them and they are disturbing the forest. So we are looking to begin a study to monitor the movement of the deers in order to discover how to react to the density of the animal in the Aletsch forest. But we can't say anything until we have results. Take another example. If we have a fire, it is disturbing the natural development. We never had a great fire, but when we will it isn't clear [what we will do]. Probably we would let the fire consume the forest and see the natural processes start anew. Normally we are doing nothing in terms of intervention to influence natural development.

**Q: So you can't say what would you do in the future**

No. The problem will be present when we have new plants (neophyte) in the forest. In this moment we probably will decide to do something against, but we cannot make decisions now. We will make decision when a real problem is there

**Q: No policy for tomorrow**

It is impossible to have one, we don't know what is coming. We have to observe the development and then decide at the moment.

**Q: What is the role of protected areas and organization in the future regarding climate change communication and education, according to your vision?**

[NOT ASKED]

**Q: Conservation is a complex reality, where science, policy and practice are coexisting and can sometimes collide. The story of SNP is an example in this sense, with local organization that tried to introduce Lynxes, even if science and policy didn't decide in favour of such introductions. What will be the future role of organizations as ProNatura in the future of conservation in the face of climate change?**

We can show effectively the effects of climate in PAs like this. It is difficult to explain climate change in Bern. We can see and show the retreat of the glacier, the instability of the slopes etc. We are at the frontline of climate change.

**Q: Do you think in the future protected areas have to be more connected to absorb the consequences of climate change**

We hope for more connection. It is always interesting to enlarge protected areas, but here it will not be possible. In this area you have alpine agriculture, tourism surrounding the PA. It is not a great exploitation of the land from agriculture, but we have pastures and sheeps moving. I don't see many possibilities for a greater PA. I don't think so. There is no strategy to make this PA bigger. We have other PAs in the region, but it is impossible to connect them. Our PA here is 100% protected. There is also a heritage site of more than 800 km<sup>2</sup> of surface and it belongs to this region. The protection of the World Heritage is different than ours. We had discussion about a National Park but no strong discussion, just ideas of making a National Park, but the thing is not really on the table. The surface of our PA is 4 km<sup>2</sup>. For a National Park you need hundreds square kilometres. It would be a good idea in my view, but discussions are not really there

**Q: You think it might change in the future?**

When you are discussing about a National Park you have to ensure you have these factors: nature and tourism. It will be very interesting for the former, because there will be a large region.

**Q: So we can say climate change is not a central topic of discussion in the field of conservation?**

When I look at the glacier, for us and our work, climate change is important. To the Aletsch Arena, it is not. All this snow makes impossible to communicate climate change properly. On the other side we have this area from the community of Frieder Alp for 99 years in 1933. So we have the PA until 2022. So it is not important to enlarge the protected area, in 14 years we will need a new contract. We have to ensure the PA, not to enlarge it, at the moment. We have a strict timetable

**Q: Scientist are showing us clearly that projected changes due to climate change are going to alter the ecological integrity of ecosystems. Do you think – as a conservationist – that this can**

**translate in a cultural damage, if we consider the iconic dimension of certain species or landmarks?**

I don't know if I understood the question. I would say, looking to the people coming here, I make a difference between people coming in our centre and others. We have a weekend during the mating seasons of red deers. Tourist want to see that. When we have a weekend on Black Grouse, they expect to see the Black Grouse. Same for the glacier's weekend. They are coming to see something and hear from us something about the subject. To general tourists, in the summer for example, I think the view of the glacier and the forest is naïve. They see the glacier and the forest and they are ok, but they don't detect changes. A view of the glacier, a walk in the forest, the smell of the pines. I don't think they are wondering about ecological or physical changes. Perhaps somebody can ask about apparent changes, and then we can explain and speak about climate change. When I show them old pics of the glacier they are shocked. But still, at the moment, we still have 23 km of glacier that are here, so there is no problem for them. There are these 2 different tourists.

**Q: Do you think in an hypothetical future, where signs of climate change will be very present, where we can see clear evidences, this is going to be a problem even for the tourism in the region or at least in the Zentrum, or you believe it will be a new form of tourism focused on the new features of the land?**

At the moment we can see, with the retreat of the glacier, the tourist will see little lakes that are very nice to see. I don't know if they see a problem with the glacier retreat. We will have other problems, like landslides, permafrost etc. But we are still far away. Like problems of water availability for hydroelectric functions, they will arise. When you have such problems, everybody will be more sensitive, but it will be too late. For us it is important to show people everyday what is at stakes with climate change. Many people will not care about the species of the trees you can see here. Arolla pines or other tree are the same to them. But when you don't have the water you need, that is a problem. But still not in the moment. Some people still see a positive trait in hotter summer, and it is dangerous.

**Q: it is going to be a central topic in your storytelling at the Zentrum**

We are trying to make it more and more central, yes. Show to the people the pace of the retreat

Christoph Kull (23.01.2018)

**Q: La ricerca nelle aree protette spesso non comprende i cambiamenti climatici tra i principali temi di ricerca. Da cosa credi sia causato questo ritardo tra le prescrizioni della politica federale e l'adeguamento delle linee di ricerca?**

Si è strano davvero. Hai detto correttamente che nel PNS questa domanda è importante. Devi sapere che gli altri progetti di parchi svizzeri sono nel mio modo di vedere frutto di una domanda economico-politica. Il nome "park" è un contenitore ampio di interessi. Penso che attori come ProNatura o altre ONG abbiano una funzione importante per porre queste domande nelle agende dei parchi. Le strutture

mi sembrano organizzarsi attorno a fatti economici: l'interesse della popolazione è soprattutto economico, quello ambientale forse arriva in un secondo momento

**Q: In effetti ho notato che, al di fuori del PNS i parchi Svizzeri sono molto giovani. Fare ricerca climatica vuol dire basarsi su dati e osservazioni di lungo periodo. Pur essendoci una componente scientifica, che è da pesare a questo punto, credo che manchi una politica di ricerca comune ai parchi**

Sì, è vero.

**Q: Parlando con alcuni conservazionisti e scienziati attenti al campo della conservazione, ho notato che il cambiamento climatico non viene considerato ancora un problema “del presente”, se non quando tocca direttamente problemi concreti, ad esempio frane in aree protette causate dalla dilavazione pluviale. Persino organizzazioni come ProNatura, quando sollecitate a descrivere le proprie politiche riguardo i cambiamenti climatici in specifiche aree protette, continuano a trattare il cambiamento climatico come “qualcosa che verrà”; si dicono pronti al monitoraggio, ma non hanno una vera e propria politica futura a riguardo. Come spieghi questo fenomeno?**

Vero, ma è un problema che si estende a tutta la società. La Svizzera è molto organizzata, se cominci a cambiare è difficile. La risposta che mi riferisci è tipica, perché un cambiamento è possibile solo se ci sono patti. Bisogna sentire che qualcosa sia cambiato veramente. Queste sono strutture pesanti, difficili da cambiare. Ho discusso con Thomas [Scheurer] del fatto che sarebbe giusto avere strutture in grado di adattarsi, trovare nuove possibilità. Ma alla fine l'organizzazione capillare rende difficile cambiare qualcosa davvero.

**Q: La strategia federale di adattamento ai cambiamenti climatici menziona le migrazioni delle specie come una necessità per far fronte al cambiamento e prescrive la realizzazione di un'infrastruttura geografica di aree protette. Nella realizzazione di una simile impresa saranno sicuramente necessari modelli climatici e modelli di dispersione delle specie, ma sarà probabilmente necessaria la presenza di un sistema di monitoraggio climatico (ed ecologico) che comprenda tutto il territorio e sicuramente le aree protette. La Svizzera è dotata di un simile sistema?**

L'infrastruttura è cresciuta secondo un pensiero differente. I primi luoghi di raccolta dati, in montagna, nel San Gottardo o San Bernardino. La discussione di nuovi punti di osservazione sono sorte dalle compagnie private che hanno messo pressione. Non credo questa discussione sia mai entrata nella progettazione della rete. La rete è fatta seguendo indicazioni di popolazione. La rete c'è, è nata in contesti diversi

**Q: Può essere uno strumento importante anche per domani?**

Sì. Penso che soprattutto nelle montagne ci sarà bisogno di svilupparla però.

**Q: Un altro elemento interessante legato all'incertezza. La risposta federale è stata quella di sviluppare nuove infrastrutture, che però non sono fatte per accomodare incertezza. Quando penso alla connettività fisica come soluzione, credo che l'incertezza non sia ancora stata trasmessa alla politica in maniera efficace. Corridoi ecologici sono rigidi spesso, la Svizzera non è il Canada, c'è una geografia storica diversa, landuse diverso ecc. Spendere soldi per la realizzazione di un'infrastruttura basata su un modello climatico impreciso potrebbe essere rischioso**

Assolutamente. In più, qui in Svizzera una volta si diceva che per ogni metro quadrato c'è un proprietario, per via della frazione della proprietà della terra. Quando fu organizzato ... è stato difficile mettere tutti gli attori attorno al tavolo per la discussione e finalizzare un perimetro. Se la scienza apre alla possibilità di rimettere in discussione un piano che preveda l'incertezza sarebbe sicuramente uno stravolgimento per tutti gli attori

**Q: Laudo Albrecht evidenziava come la connettività sia all'atto pratico molto difficile nel caso dell'Aletschwald per via del numero di stakeholders coinvolti nell'uso del territorio attorno alla riserva. Mi sembra paradigmatico delle difficoltà di gestione legate al cambiamento climatico. Ci sono molti ostacoli verso una gestione elastica**

Ancora più in Svizzera per via della stratificazione politica, con i piani federali. Difficile arrivare a tutti i livelli, che sia bottom-up o top-down, i livelli da toccare sono tantissimi.

**Q: Uno dei più importanti effetti del cambiamento climatico è stata l'introduzione della dimensione dell'incertezza, che oggi diviene parte integrante di scienze come la geografia o la pianificazione territoriale. Come si comunica l'incertezza scientifica in modo che essa non sia interpretata come semplice "impossibilità di previsione?"**

Assolutamente vero. Questa è qualcosa che cerchiamo di fare da dieci anni, comunicare la tematica dell'incertezza. Un tema difficile da comunicare anche negli ambiti scientifici. Abbiamo un gruppo parlamentare "cambio climatico" che organizza un incontro tre-quattro volte l'anno in cui parliamo di tematiche attuali in questo contesto. L'incertezza è appunto difficile da comunicare. Alla fine mi sembra che in Svizzera la pesantezza delle strutture renda tutto difficile: tutto funziona così bene, perché cambiare? L'inerzia è forte e comunicare il bisogno di elasticità è difficile.

**Q: Esistono studi riguardo lo spostamento delle fasce bioclimatiche in Svizzera?**

Penso di sì. A Losanna ci deve essere un gruppo dedicato.

**Q: Nel 2007 usciva "Le Alpi sotto serra. L'esempio della Svizzera di fronte ai cambiamenti climatici" di Martine Rébetez. Studi del genere hanno la capacità di comunicare gli effetti ambientali del cambiamento climatico anche al grande pubblico?**

Una domanda importante. Questo rapporto si chiama “cambiamento climatico nella Svizzera all’anno 2050”, dove abbiamo valutato gli effetti possibili su ogni settore. Questo rapporto è attuale. La difficoltà è stata la stessa, comunicare i risultati a tutti i rami della società civile

**Q: Ci sono altri ostacoli oltre a quello dell’incertezza?**

Assolutamente sì. Il fatto che il cambiamento climatico ci sia, come ci siano degli effetti che comportano dei costi è chiaro. Ci sono domande, ma non sappiamo ancora quale sia la migliore risposta, anche sul piano politico. Per alcuni la risposta migliore è non fare niente.

**Q: Ho trovato sorprendente il fatto che nella strategia federale sia vada oltre gli eventi estremi. Dal punto di vista del rischio ambientale l’evento estremo è ovviamente nucleo dell’attenzione. Affrontare un discorso più ampio legato ai cambiamenti di lungo periodo è difficile.**

Lo è anche in Svizzera. Affrontare gli eventi estremi è più immediato perché sono quelli che la società realizza immediatamente. D’altra parte, le generazioni più giovani conoscono la situazione attuale come normale, mentre per noi è differente. C’è una difficoltà, perché i cambiamenti graduali non si realizzano se non in prospettiva intergenerazionale.

**Q: Cosa si può fare perché la ricerca sul clima entri in altri ambiti solitamente riservati ad altre scienze?**

Mi sembra che la possibilità di organizzare conferenze e colloqui sia molto utile per la comunità scientifica per stimolare confronto e presentare le varie ricerche. Abbiamo fatto veramente buone esperienze di confronto in passato. Organizziamo ogni anno una conferenza a Berna, interdisciplinare, e sulla tematica, includendo attori federali e comunità scientifiche.

**Q: Da questi colloqui si riesce a produrre programmi di ricerca nuovi e condivisi?**

Ci sono entrambi gli aspetti. Per arrivare a progetti interdisciplinari, questo non è il modello. Questo è il modello per portare le comunità a toccarsi e stimolare discussione e conoscenza. Per trovare domande scientifiche importanti, anche. Direi che sono queste le funzioni di questa sede. Possono nascere progetti interdisciplinari. In Svizzera è più facile, perché è una nazione piccola e conoscere i membri della comunità e sviluppare possibilità di lavorare insieme è più facile. La geografia della Svizzera aiuta.

**Q: La Svizzera può essere un laboratorio per l’adattamento ai cambiamenti climatici**

Sì. Che si riesca a farlo è anche una scelta politica. Penso alle persone che entrano nel governo o nei settori dell’economia. C’è la possibilità di comunicare con queste persone. Lo scambio c’è, qui si può fare. La scienza non è chiusa in sé stessa.

Felix Kienast and Mathias Bürgi (25.01.2018)



**Q: Climate change poses many threats to conservation as we know it today. The most interesting aspect in my view is the spatial dimension of climate-environmental change, that is basically challenging the way in which we conserved nature, with isolated areas devoted to the protection of environments or landscapes of special value. One of the main answers is the creation of ecological connectivity that allows species to migrate. Is landscape ecology the best tool to inform such effective planning against climate change?**

B: I think indeed that the landscape level analysis and perspective is appropriate on one hand on the ecological level, because it is not focusing on single habitats or networks and can address shifts in the networks, shifts in the suitability of patches for species including climate change scenario. There is a discussion on what landscape ecology is. It is the ecological interpretation of landscape? We are having discussions on this every day. We have the spatial ecology aspect: it makes sense to use this approach. But landscape ecology includes the human dimension. We are probably getting fluffy, but I think it is exactly this holistic and encompassing approach which is needed, including people and the land, and see how conservation strategies address this dimension in climate change

K: I can add that landscape scale is most likely the right scale for planning. I strongly believe that the reason why the landscape scale is so appropriate for planning is that regions contain communities, might contain ethnic groups, and these presence is reflected in the landscape. It is an intermediate level, the one of the regions. Even in EU policies, the regions are more and more prominent as planning unit. We have these biological and anthropogenic elements and the very specific spatial scale, not the square meter or the global level, but something in between.

**Q: Do you think this particular spatial dimension is a constant in the scientific community [in landscape ecology] or there are regional differences?**

K: In the USA is called regional studies. That is very appropriate to express what landscape ecology does. For a long time in geography, the “region” was a kind of replacement of the term landscape probably. But for example here in Switzerland subsidies are often addressed to regions. Not the level of the municipality, but this intermediate level

B: I think it is important to remark that we are referring to the region not in a political sense

**Q: Space and place are an integral part of landscape research, especially in the human dimension. Is it possible to envision in the future a prominent role for this kind of research in conservation, especially in regard to climate change?**

K: From a place perspective, I would rather say that is the landscape or the region actually the spatial entity where people can make living or establish place attachment. I would oppose your statement [of planning in order to fight the effects of climate change]. The strong emphasis on conservation is on fighting? No, there is nothing to fight. Species arrangement will change, and new species assemblages will form. The big task is to design a kind of future landscape where people can be attached to and species can find new habitats. The strict conservation aspect will fail. You can't find new localities – either for humans nor for plants and animals – that are identical to the ones where conservation issues were implemented originally. That is adaptation expressed in a very complicated way.

**Q: Conservation might be seen as a social endeavor, connecting different actors and ideas in different historical moments. Today, landscape-scale conservation is gaining centrality in the general discourse, connecting scientists, policymaker, and practitioners around an analysis of the spatial dimension. What has been the degree of permeability of environmental policy (and especially connectivity initiatives) to concepts arising from the domain of landscape ecology?**

K: I think spatial ecology does inform policy. Spatial ecology could be enough to solve the problem if it wasn't for the presence of the people and the place perspective; then, this human dimension kicks in. If you exclude the people, you don't need landscape ecology, but the human dimension makes landscape ecology appealing to policy. In certain domains, you need this regional intermediate scale and address people in their environment and landscape ecology is probably the more fitting tool.

B: All policy processes that suffer somehow from the consequences of sectoral approaches are open to the landscape perspective. The question is how is this going to be expressed in the policy? For example, in agricultural subsidies system in Switzerland, we have landscape quality considerations. That is an expression of this kind of struggle, that once you realize you are promoting nature, you could lose the traditional aspects. If you promote in a specific region subsidies for hedgerows then you could encourage to adopt hedgerow everywhere and you could lose the specificity of the region if this region had no hedgerows historically. Landscape ecology can be an appropriate way to take consideration of different elements that are part of the landscape and inform policy in its task of realizing appropriate subsidies schemes.

K: Maybe if you look at the whole thing from a policy perspective, it might be interesting to read some Dutch planning, because up to ten years ago, the landscape was the core issue in planning. Now they have lost it a bit and are more focused on the sectorial aspects. But for a long time, a landscape approach was dominant as a spatial entity. They implemented a network based on the landscape. Even in building codes, if you build a house, the garden or the surrounding of the house have to fit in a regional or landscape character written in a building code. This is digested by a very low [local] planning level.

**Q: How much is climate studied as a driver of change in the field of landscape ecology?**

K: For a long time the scientific community thought, and maybe someone still thinks, that changes due to human land use are much more dominant than changes by climate change, so climate change entered in the community not with the same efficiency of vegetation science, for instance. But it is changing. It will be interesting to see if in Milano (IALE meeting) the topic will arise. On a legal level, in Switzerland for example, "connectivity" is the key term

**Q: The idea of "infrastructure" entails a certain degree of rigidity. Climate change brought uncertainty to the discussion: species will migrate, but to foresee the direction and speed of the flows will be a difficult challenge, and investments on a "fixed" infrastructure could be useless if our predictive models aren't accurate enough. Do you think that a landscape scale planning – focused not only on the creation of corridors, buffers and stepping stones but also on the creation of functional connectivity in the broader landscape - could be more suitable for an uncertainty-driven planning? Could cultural landscapes be part of such a conservation model? (softening the anthropogenic matrix)**

**Q: In ecological connectivity policies and experiments (like the pilot regions), we are assuming that structural connectivity, measured as landcover units, is a reasonable proxy of functional connectivity. Does our assumption remain valid in a context of climate change and consequential changes in communities' composition?**

[Not discussed]

**Q: Cultural landscapes are becoming objects of conservation efforts: the IUCN designed a category for them and biosphere reserves comprise some cultural landscapes. Is a spatially dynamic approach suitable even for this kind of landscapes, where the focus of the protection is not just on the biological component, but on the particular balance between an environment and a local population? How can we envision the future of conservation for this kind of landscapes?**

B: I wouldn't agree that they are becoming objects of conservation, they already are. There are fundamental differences when you think about including built heritage, things that cannot be moved. We already said that the landscape is a way to look at the issue [of climate change]. I also think that if we say the landscape is an appropriate scale we are not referring to the cultural landscape, which is a completely different dimension. This space is geographically fixed, it is not going to move and I cannot see the consequences of a conservation discussion [in relation to climate change] for cultural landscapes. Using the cultural landscape as a starting point or a conceptual framework is tricky. I don't also buy on that "biocultural diversity thing". These are two dimensions that on a first view form an attractive parallel, it is fashionable, but it's confusing to mix concepts. I wouldn't do it. The cultural landscape has specific characteristics made by some traditional use of the land that hasn't much sense for your discussion. We can argue that every landscape we are dealing with is a cultural landscape: not in a historical perspective, but in the sense that they are evolving every day under human influence, in that sense yes, every landscape is cultural.

K: if a region is composed of traditional landscape elements and they disappear due to climate change, the region will lose some of its characters. Maybe the LCA would be more appropriate to solve the problem. The big question is how the attachment of the people to the landscape change in response to those original changes. I would think that the big task is to somehow construct a meaningful landscape for future generations. Species might move, people might move! If they come to areas where they have never been before the big task is to generate an identity for these people in relation to the environment. It is again a very difficult definition of "adaptation". To come back to your question, it's not the question of conservation of this areas, it can't be done: landscape elements will change as people will change. To maintain a meaningful landscape is the task.

B: This whole discussion is so much cultural-context dependant. We are sensitive to "fake monuments". I can imagine a Chinese tourist coming here. if it looks old, well, it is enough. The link with real history is secondary. Should he see in China one of these shopping malls in traditional houses surrounded by skyscrapers in the middle of the city, it would be "normal". Our cultural expectations are shaping our way to think about our relationship with the landscape. It is European, not global, This is our way to make sense of the landscape.

**Q: In Italy, we have a strong tradition of landscape as a materialization of our agricultural culture. Sometimes I have the feeling that we want to freeze landscapes in time. Even if this**

**landscape is no more suited to the climate or other changing conditions, we fight the change anyway. We are promoting an idea of static landscape and future policies should change**

B: Mauro Agnoletti, he is in the biocultural discussion and he is dealing with the “catasto” of the Italian landscapes. He can be a good reference to talk about this approach as an answer to climate change.

K: I am thinking about an initiative, “Countryside Quality Counts”, in England, a publication coming out at the turn of the century, that used LCA and called people to give their vision of quality in their area. Fifteen years later they assessed the differences between the visions and the reality and I think this method can still be used in other parts of Europe. This could include climate change. We get rid of something that is not fitted, but we generate something new and meaningful. There is work to do.

B: if the process is happening anyway you have to let it happen.

K: And by the way: this topic of biocultural landscape. Shall we oppose it?

B: What do you get from it? It is obvious that there are culture and biodiversity in a specific region, but why call it biocultural? This discussion is potentially underestimating the dynamics of the landscape, and that would be the wrong track. The landscape has different dimensions and I am not sure of what we gain from this fusion

K: I think you should use the definition of landscape given by the European Landscape Convention. There you have the people and nature that govern the evolution of the landscape, And the people perceive it. I think it is a better concept than a “Biocultural unit”.

B: I fully agree, but I am not sure, regarding the scope of your thesis, if you are referring to conservation as parks and protected areas, or you want to talk about landscapes and values associated with them. You want to talk about 100% of the land or about 5% of the land? Conservation taking place in some reserves, or are you talking about how to maintain the value on 100% on the landscape?

**Q: actually both. On the policy level, the reaction is the building of an infrastructure between reserves. Connecting dots without too much consideration for the broader landscape. I want to understand if this idea of connecting dots is a good idea in the face of climate change. Discussing with some climatologists, the biggest thing is the uncertainty. If we build a fixed infrastructure, we are probably using the same principles without thinking at the broader scale. I don't know exactly what is the right scale.**

B: Do you think the idea of building a green infrastructure is highly motivated by climate change? Or it is probably because these isolated populations are not able to survive in the long term?

**Q: Climate Change is not the explicit driver, there is no linear cause-effect relationship. But still, it is also cited as one of the reasons we should think of such a connectivity infrastructure.**

B: The idea is that if habitats are not suitable at least they can move, have the chance to survive. For certain species it can work, It might be naïve for the whole biodiversity. The landscape might have different permeabilities, habitats suitability and this could influence the ability of the species to move. Of course, infrastructure would open up space for invasive species you don't want to promote. There will be new possibilities for some species and barriers to others. It is anyway an evolving topic

**Q: Talking with Patrick Kupper we addressed the topic of charismatic species and the suitability of connectivity infrastructure. We had to acknowledge that our aim is sometimes to conserve a particular species because it is more “valuable”**

B: Yes, it is probably a matter of honesty, we have to recognize that some species are better for the economy and some species might have more attention than others

**Q: The effects of climate change are not just physical-biological: the landscape and the environment – or some of their particular components - carry symbolic meanings for societies or human communities. If from an ecological standpoint some changes in protected areas (i.e. the composition of species) could be allowed, it could turn into a problem on a “place perspective”. Changing forest compositions, local extinction of iconic species, diminishing of the ice-snow cover could be some examples of future environmental changes. How these changes alter the symbolic meaning of landscapes/environments involved? Are slower changes in the landscape more acceptable from a human community perspective than abrupt changes? Do you think that parks and PAs should stand in protection of some of those symbolic meanings of the landscapes?**

K,: I think that protected areas have some meaning for what they stand for. For example, in National Parks in the USA, you have a topic that is compatible with the landscape characters. So for example, if in Glacier National Park glacier would be gone, the meaning will be necessarily different. Let's think along the line of a disappearing glacier. Even if they disappear they can have a meaning. Even if a glacier vanishes the moraines will be there and remind people what used to be there, and people will visit the area the same. I think meaning don't disappear, they are replaced. I think it is wrong to fight for the one and only meaning of a place or landscape in the light of climate change. Hence, I think it is wrong to fight for the one and only meaning of a place in the light of climate change

B: Talking about symbolic meaning, maybe it is a matter of defining what stories places might hold. One interesting example in Switzerland involves the Open Air Museum in Ballenberg, one farmhouse was burned down. They conserved it as it was after the fire because in traditional agricultural landscape building could actually be burned down. They never reconstruct it for 20 years, so in the end, it is falling apart, just a pile of rock. People ask the meaning for the pile of stones they see now, they cannot see the hidden meaning. The question is very practical: why do you want to keep telling these stories? We have to get rid of some stories. Also with the glaciers, seeing the traces witnessing the past presence of the glacier, you will have very relevant stories to tell. When the story loses the meaning, you have to get rid of it. It is not static, stories have a meaning to people, and meaning changes.

K: Probably Gloria Pungetti, who is working on sacred landscapes, would not share our view. She talked about the sacred dimension applied to species and landscapes and she probably thought about climate change and species disappearance. Probably she is more on the track that things can get lost. We believe things are not lost, they just move. We believe meanings are not lost, they transform. She can give you an opposite view on the same topic.

B: If we focus on things that get lost, traditions can get lost. This (the opposite) approach is a reaction to this historical geography, but things evolve, even from a historical perspective.

K: probably losing things in a small time span might be the problem. It makes thing less acceptable.

B: My Ph.D. Advisor, he was always complaining about the fact the landscape in Switzerland is always nice, and that was a problem for landscape development. Things are changing slowly and the pace is crucial

Florian Knaus (29.01.2018)

**Q: I had a look at research in the Entlebuch. There is just one ongoing research on climate change, by Thomas Hammer. I also found an elder research focused on the vulnerability of hydrological ecosystem services, but nothing more.**

It is true. It isn't a topic that has been much investigated. There was an additional student research on climate change and wetlands, but it was something really small.

**Q: I had the occasion to read one article of yours, in eco.mont, on the 10<sup>th</sup> anniversary of research in the Entlebuch, where you were describing research made and aiming at the creation of monitoring systems. Thomas Scheurer also showed me you have developed twelve monitoring indicators. Are you willing to develop systems for monitoring the climate or something related to it?**

We are trying to make the monitoring initiatives more systematic. We haven't really included monitoring aspects specifically related to climate change, but we have two climate stations here in the Entlebuch. We are collecting data also from the river, so we could have data on the runoff. But that's it. We would be generally interested, but it's a matter of finances whether and how climate change could be monitored by us.

**In a very few words, not a central topic**

No. You know, Entlebuch is a region with extremely high precipitation. Let's say that if the temperature goes a little bit up and rainfall goes a little bit down, this is not particularly bad. It is a region with extremes. If precipitations during the summer decrease – and this is what is expected – that doesn't have an extreme effect in terms of how the landscape will change.

**Q: Do you think it might have consequences on the side of tourism?**

I think winter tourism is not so much on topic. There are two ski resorts, one is very low, and we are already checking which other options we have, an alternative to traditional ski and snow-oriented tourism. In higher places there is so much precipitation, except for last winter, there is generally enough snow. This is not a big issue. We had bigger issue with landslides from heavy precipitation for example. If this increases, it would be more problematic, that would make us think more about climate change. Precipitation in summer and higher temperatures are not a problem. One topic that was particularly thick was bark beetle infestations in summer, but it is not so much of a topic anymore. I see forest management has to change in a way that this more efficient and relies more on tree species that are not affected by bark beetles. This has already been implemented starting about 10 years ago.

**Q: So there is nothing worth-noting going on climate change and wetlands or moorlands**

Something we are not sure of is how peatlands are influenced by climate change. We have seen in extreme dry summers of the past few years that they are dry and there might be changes, but we don't know how, we don't have monitoring there. We have to try to compare the situation of the peatlands in the 1980s and today, in 40 years. That might be useful to have insights to what changed, but we don't know yet (a Master Thesis will be finished on this topic by the end of the year). Generally, we can say it is not a huge issue yet, but it can be problematic if peatlands run dry in summer, there might be additional CO<sub>2</sub> issues.

**We can say tomorrow the role of moorlands will be twofold. They will play the role of iconic landscape by one side and carbon sinkers by the other. I talked with Thomas Hammer about the significance of this landscape and in Switzerland and in the fact they are constitutionally protected. I saw interest in moorlands internationally, especially in the UK, where even tradeoff scenarios between forest and moorlands are considered. In Switzerland moorlands are scattered throughout the land and the Entlebuch hosts the only cluster of these habitats. We know that in the face of climate change fragmented habitats are the most vulnerable. In a climate-altered scenario, it is probable that the Entlebuch will play an important role in the future of conservation of this kind of habitat**

Hopefully, it is true. We don't have the only cluster but we have a specially high density of peatlands and this is just a fraction of the original distribution. What we know is that 80% of the intact raised bogs of Switzerland are in our region. We have not yet approached the theme of the CO<sub>2</sub> sequestration, i.e. how much CO<sub>2</sub> is sequestered in peatlands in the biosphere reserve. There is a woman in charge at WSL, she is working on standards to calculate carbon balance for restoration projects and cooperate with a compensation company. They set a standard in which calculate how much money to invest in restoration. We are in contact with them. We have plans to put the question in place. When you do a restoration and climate change is starting to be more severe, even more than expected, in summers when the overall precipitation lower than the mean, it could be a problem to keep this vegetation in place.

**Q: When you set up a research agenda you obviously need to balance the local needs of the PA and the international dimension of conservation effort: do you think that in the future climate change might push you toward pursuing both local needs and international monitoring goal?**

Yes. You know, these peatlands are 80% or 90% privately owned. In case climate change will put such a pressure that there is real money allocations towards CO<sub>2</sub> sequestration – these peatlands are carbon sinks – and we will find a mechanism to allocate this interest with money to the people who own the lands, there will be a chance. I think that there is potential to bring closer these two levels. Here [points at the map] the greenish and yellowish parts are areas where the land is used, but it is a nature conservation kind of use, sustained with subsidies. In that case, the land still has a value for them. The blueprint is here, but it is not related at the moment to any Co<sub>2</sub> sequestration initiative. There is a good chance these [Co<sub>2</sub> sequestration initiatives] will have an influence on land use in the future, but not at all the moment. Because currently there are no CO<sub>2</sub>-payment-schemes.

**Q: A more general question. Why do you think climate change can't find room in Swiss research conservation agenda?**

I don't know. Probably Switzerland considers itself so small it cannot have an impact on climate change.

**Q: It probably holds true in the case of mitigation, but here we are talking about adaptation.**

I think that in terms of research that is going on at the Swiss level, climate change is quite an issue.

**Q: it is, but seldom in relation to protected areas.**

I think Swiss people are risk-oriented. A lot of researcher addressing issues of risks and natural dangers, like landslides and avalanches. This has been studied widely. But when it comes to protected areas in Switzerland, unfortunately, political interest is not very high.

**[Q: And the network is relatively young, so probably the main point of research has to be on the issue of acceptance. Parks are heavy structures and have to deal with different obstacles in their process of territorialization]**

**Q: speaking with people involved in conservation I discover something interesting. Coming from a purely theoretical point of view, the impression reading papers, headlines, international policy documents etc is that climate change is a big overarching process that is touching in some way each and every human activity, science included. But when you actually read research programs – and this is purely a hypothesis – you notice that the interest in climate change is a situated one. Research is answering local needs and it has in some way to meet the research concepts. I think we can say the gravitational pull of the international discourse is absent. Research here is applied rather than theoretical: if there is no point of contact with local needs and research concepts developed, interest is not arising.**

I find it an interesting hypothesis. It is true that there is some kind of a gap. We have been approached a few times from people wanting to do something about climate change, like projects on how potentially peatlands can change when climate change stresses them. This is something you can ask yourself but nobody has an answer. Thomas Hammer's group of students, in the end, they had to ask an expert who had no answer to give. I find it interesting because the only thing you can really do is adaptation. Of course, we can contribute by conserving our peatlands, but this is something we already want to do [independently from climate change] and we have side effects of helping a bit with CO<sub>2</sub> sequestration, but you know, these few hectares won't save the world. From a conservation point of view, the only thing you can do is approach it intergenerationally. You restore the peatlands and you make sure you have done what you could have done.

**Q: This is a common topic: parks and protected areas are more reactive than proactive. When I asked Laudo Albrecht if he can see some changes in the Aletschwald or has some research describing them. He answered me that he actually has empirical evidence, but no research on the topic has been made. When I asked him what would they do when the changes induced by**



**climate change cross a threshold where they start being problematic, he had no answer. It is a waiting game until something significant happens and some of the key values – the core business of the PA in some way – get touched.**

Yes, and there is also to consider the concrete possibility to do something about it. The Aletsch glacier is retreating anyway, there is nothing you can do. But if you have species conservation problems or problems with the trails where people cannot walk anymore, then you start being active. For instance, we actually have references to climate change in our research concept, but we just never done anything specifically to research it.

**Q: from a species composition standpoint and its relation with tourism, what does the Entlebuch offer?**

We have basically all the alpine herbivores. Birds and birdwatching are also a reality here, and we have some migratory birds, not a high concentration but it is still an interesting corridor. There are even some climate-sensitive birds, but again, you can't do too much if temperatures are rising

**Q: I discovered in Italy some projects that are actually transboundary, like phenoalps and its son, e-pheno, focused on monitoring phenological phasing in a changing climate. Are transboundary projects a common reality in Switzerland?**

There are some of course. But the majority of projects, especially conservation-related, are regional to local. There are difficulties even in working across different cantons. Here we have canton Bern, Canton Obwalden, Canton Lucerne and there are historical frictions between Catholic and Protestant cantons that in some way carried on to today.

**Q: It is interesting because when you take a look at research composition, the only monitoring serving higher scale need are the ones that are internationally funded and organized**

Right, this phenology thing might be a good example. However, doing conservation here is very difficult, there is resistance to nature conservation. Maybe you can't see any projects because it is a very rural region and opposed to nature conservation.

**Q: Even if the Entlebuch is an added value from an economic standpoint?**

Yes. It seems what we are doing is generally ok for the local people, but one you ask to the representatives of the municipalities and steering committees about what we are doing good and bad, they always tell us we are doing too much nature conservation because we bring too many restrictions to productive activities.

**Q: Talking about boundaries, in general when new think on a nationwide scale, the adaptation response to climate change is connectivity. I find it in policy documents and reports, but again, in science, there are considerably fewer traces of the arguments. Given the relationship with neighboring cantons, would it be problematic for the Entlebuch to establish a network?**

No. But I think it is all still highly conceptual-hypothetical. The fact that species might move upwards is something people can grasp. Initiatives like connectivity network, they are difficult to understand. I'm a bit skeptical myself. I see many times humans have an extremely anthropocentric view of how things move on the landscape. For example here this red dot [points on the map] this is a plant species that occurs nowhere else it has never been occurred anywhere, a very small species. This place has been investigated by many people over the last decade and nobody find this plant species anywhere else, but than you think how can we make this little berry dispersal and how the heck did it get there. Is this just the only relict habitat and originally was everywhere else? But it is strange because this place has the same history in terms of climate change than many other places. It is an extreme example, but if you want to do a connectivity network for this plant how do you do it? This species would most likely not go anywhere else. Hence, it is nice to think about building up networks, but illustrating what this means in practice and from the perspective of concrete species, it can get difficult to explain and justify.

**Q: Probably the critical node is the divide between structural connectivity and functional connectivity. [Valle del Freddo example]**

Yes. And probably it all comes down to your own understanding of what nature conservation should do at all.

**Q: Speaking with Buergi and Kienast at WSL, I discovered they are absolutely relativistic about processes of signification of the land and its features and I think this is something not common in landscape and nature conservation**

People can be stiff and see conservation as an effort to keep things here, no matter the costs, for somebody else this doesn't make any sense. If a species is isolated genetically probably is just gone. Can it withstand, does it have enough genetic variability? We have the example here of a plant that occurs in two places, here [points at the map] and in northern countries. Some restoration projects have been done, but one night a deer decided to eat some of the plants. Can it now survive? If you take this two points [on map] they have different undergrounds, one is dry and one is not. How can you create connectivity? Sometimes it is just impossible – from a theoretical point as well.

Thomas Scheurer (24.05.2018)

**Q: Do you think climate change will be a central topic of research in the future for SNP?**

Climate change is designated as an official topic of National Park research in the research concepts 2008-2018 and 2018. It has been and will be a central research topic.

**Q: What is the degree of relevance of climate change research in the general research agenda of SNP?**

Climate change issues are on the top of relevance, together with the evolution of wildlife. Most of the disciplines work on topics related to climate change. Research provides a large range of facts concerning effects of climate change (see: [http://4dweb.proclim.ch/4DCGI/parkforschung/de/DetailLink\\_Program?pn-swiss\\*Projects](http://4dweb.proclim.ch/4DCGI/parkforschung/de/DetailLink_Program?pn-swiss*Projects)). Most of research profits from earlier studies (resurvey studies e.g. on snakes, butterflies, macroinvertebrates, summit plants, millepedes, etc.). On the other hand, there is no concerted research program on climate change effects in the Park and its ecosystems.

**Q: How can climate change affect the SNP's core conservation interest? Is climate change a threat to the practice of conservation in the park?**

The SNP offers best opportunities to study climate change effects, as natural processes are not influenced /managed on place. In this regard, climate change is a “neutral” external driver of natural processes and “observed” by research. Strict protection as an ideal laboratory! Like that, climate change does not affect conservation. If species are extinct in the Park due to climate change, this has to be accepted, if new species migrate to the Park, this has to be accepted. BUT: it is possible, that a political discussion can lead to management measures, if surroundings or infrastructures are threatened, e.g. regarding natural forest fire or debris flows.

**Q: How are the current researches on the topic born? What are their aims and scopes?**

There are many studies, that document an effect of climate change to specific habitats or species. Most of such research projects are related to long-term monitoring and research or resurvey of old data samplings, as already mentioned.

**Q: Research on climate change in Swiss protected areas appears to be mostly driven by local PA's interests rather than national or international coordination between different protected areas, according to the interviews carried on so far. Do you agree with this claim?**

For SNP this is partly true. SNP was and is engaged in several international programmes that address (also) climate change issues. GLOCHAMORE, transformed into GLOCHAMOST by MRI and MAB UNESCO. SNP participated in the original conception and Reno workshop, however the results are not yet evident and implementation not clear. We also have Cooperation in wildlife research with Alpine protected areas, mainly ibex and red deer. An important step is constituted by the GLORIA global programme; SNP installed two series in calcareous and acid summits, and it is the only target region worldwide that documents evolution in both lithological aspects in the same area. Another initiative is linked to spring monitoring, in cooperation with other Alpine National Parks. Concerning High mountain lakes and ponds monitoring, the network *lacs sentinelles*, the SNP is in contact with France and Italy. In conclusion, we are conducting studies on herbivores -grassland interactions in different ecosystems. The network is a global one, comprising SNP, Yellowstone, Serengeti, and Australia

**Q: Do you believe that in the future international cooperation will push more towards a common research agenda for protected areas on climate change?**

Yes, this is evident. A first step is that data from protected areas are of interest to analyse climate change effects in different land use systems. A second is that PA cooperate more and more on monitoring programmes.

**Q: Do you expect climate change to play an important role in influencing the spatial distribution of species in and around the SNP?**

Yes, but these are very slow processes. Just the migration of some species does not indicate that ecosystems are changing. We have to be careful in the interpretations of climate induced changes. What we need are analysing climate related changes in different “segments” of ecosystems (soil, air, water, forest, grassland, etc.). It is until today not evident, dass evolution has the same direction in all “segemnts”. Exposition or block dumps e.g. can offer retreats for arctic species even if temperatures are increasing. In this regard mountain ecosystems are very resilient to climate change!

**Q: Nowadays climate change is one of the most popular topics in general scientific communication and conservation is no exception to the trend, but still, the amount of indexed research pieces in alpine PAs is relatively small. Do you think climate change might be an overspoken phenomenon with respect to its actual measurable influence in conservation, at least on the alpine scale?**

See part two of the previous answer. Yes, mountain ecosystems are very resilient to climate change and we have to be careful in interpretation and in taking management measures.

**Q: Do you think that international projects like GLORIA might be the best way to create a scientific supranational interest around climate change in Alpine conservation?**

Yes, but such projects have to be designed in a way they can initiate research, as GLORIA. In the SNP a couple of projects are related to the GLORIA approach, focusing different aspects, that are not covered by GLORIA, as thermal variation, decomposition of organic material, etc. Good potentials for global programmes related to climate change: High mountain lakes, river catchments, composition of plant communities etc.

Alice Brambilla (26.03.2018)

**Q: Quali sono gli obiettivi della tua ricerca? Quali strumenti e metodi sono impiegati per il raggiungimento degli scopi?**

Non è esattamente la mia ricerca, è la ricerca sullo stambecco nel Parco Nazionale del Gran Paradiso, in cui io collaboro dal 2008. Nello specifico l'area a lungo termine nel quale lavoro ha iniziato la propria attività circa vent'anni fa, con obiettivo iniziale diverso dallo studio dei cambiamenti climatici, ma avere osservazioni più generali di lungo termine che fornissero conoscenze più approfondite sulla specie. L'osservazione di alcuni fenomeni particolari, tra cui un calo della popolazione di stambecchi da metà anni Novanta in poi ha fatto sì che ci si dedicasse alla ricerca delle cause. Il cambiamento climatico è

stato ovviamente una delle possibili ipotesi. Da lì è iniziata una serie di monitoraggi nel tempo, perché ovviamente il problema dei cambiamenti climatici è l'impossibilità di ricostruire la variabilità passata ove non ci siano dati pregressi, per cui non c'era alternativa se non guardare al futuro. Lo stambecco ha il vantaggio di avere le corna in grado di conservarsi e funzionano come gli anelli degli alberi, quindi dai dati derivanti dallo stambecco si possono fare ricostruzioni climatiche sul passato, anche prima del 2000, l'inizio ufficiale dei rilevamenti. Possiamo risalire fino agli anni Ottanta, circa. Ci sono anche metodi legati all'analisi di immagini satellitari che ci permettono di operare delle ricostruzioni legate ai parametri dell'ambiente e non della singola specie. Adesso la nostra ricerca si muove in diverse direzioni, ma mi limito qui a quelle legate al cambiamento climatico. Ci sono conteggi sul numero di animali e sulla dinamica della popolazione, misura di parametri fisici della popolazione, come la dimensione degli animali o delle corna, che ci indicano la disponibilità trofica dell'ambiente sul lungo periodo, e a lato indagini sulla qualità dell'ambiente stesso: abbiamo immagini digitali con cui abbiamo misurato la qualità del pascolo e della risorsa trofica, oggi lo facciamo anche con campioni della vegetazione a livello stagionale per vedere come cambia la risorsa trofica nel tempo. La nostra ipotesi relativa allo stambecco è che il problema di conservazione principale sia la sincronia tra la stagione vegetativa e il ciclo biologico della specie. Tra i metodi abbiamo animali marcati e riconoscibili individualmente, su tutto il parco facciamo dei censimenti. Abbiamo aree di monitoraggio intensivo comunque. La serie storica dei censimenti parte dal 1956 ed è molto preziosa, anche con tutti i suoi limiti di omogeneità. L'ipotesi legata alla fenologia nello specifico è che con l'anticipo della stagione vegetativa – legata alla riduzione della nevosità e all'aumento delle temperature invernali – fa sì che le stagioni fenologiche più ricche di nutrienti – lo stato di germoglio – avvengano prima della nascita dei capretti. Non c'è più sincronia tra il momento dei parti e l'apice delle disponibilità trofica. I capretti non raggiungono quindi l'autunno in condizioni di salute sufficienti a superare il primo inverno, che è il momento critico nell'aspettativa di vita. Pensiamo quindi che la causa prossima del calo della popolazione sia proprio il calo nel tasso di sopravvivenza dei capretti. Sono state escluse cause patologiche, in parte ci si legava inizialmente a un calo fisiologico data l'alta densità, ma il calo è proseguito oltre l'aspettativa, da qui l'interesse per i capretti.

Altra causa possibile è la scarsa capacità di termoregolazione della specie. Lo stambecco soffre il caldo e si alza di quota, ma rischia di allontanarsi dalle sue fonti di sostentamento. Il lavoro a lungo termine che stiamo facendo ci indica in realtà che i maschi di stambecco adulto sembrano più grossi. Comprensibile, essendoci meno neve inizia a mangiare prima in primavera: i maschi adulti non sono delicati. Non abbiamo ancora risposte chiare, ma per questo ci servono studi a lungo termine.

**Q: hai detto una cosa molto interessante, cioè il fatto che la ricerca non fosse originariamente legata al cambiamento climatico, ma si è agganciata a un programma di ricerca più ampio. E' più probabile che si sviluppi una ricerca specifica legata alla singola specie piuttosto che a un intero ambiente, come la prateria alpina?**

In realtà qui le abbiamo entrambe. Il progetto biodiversità ha come obiettivo la verifica l'evoluzione della biodiversità lungo gradienti altitudinali e con i suoi dieci anni ora riesce a fornire una serie storica. "Cambiamento climatico" è un termine molto generico, ma sappiamo che la situazione è molto più complessa e che uno stesso cambiamento in ambienti diversi può avere effetti diversi. Inoltre, sulle Alpi in particolare, non c'è solo il cambiamento climatico a modificare l'ambiente, ma ci sono cambiamenti

nelle abitudini d'uso, come nelle praterie ad esempio, la dinamica è quindi molto più complessa. L'obiettivo quindi era monitorare la biodiversità nel suo complesso, utilizzando taxa di invertebrati e uccelli

**Q: quindi biodiversità animale?**

Sì, è un progetto in corso in tutte le aree protette italiane, finanziate in parte dal ministero.

**Q: una cosa interessante è che le interrogazione dei database di ricerca per raccogliere dati legati ai cambiamenti del clima nelle aree protette restituisce pochissimi risultati. Può essere un problema linguistico – e quindi un limite dello strumento – o c'è qualcosa in più?**

In realtà il problema linguistico non dovrebbe porsi, si pubblica di rado nella propria lingua. Però le aree protette sono una realtà a sé stante. Di fatto spesso non pubblicano lavori peer-reviewed. Potrebbero esserci report o letteratura grigia che va ricercata su altri canali. Il PGP ha collaborazioni con università che hanno attenzione per la ricerca, e ciò fa sì che molti lavori siano pubblicati, ma non è quello l'obiettivo primo, c'è una forma di ricerca applicata. Alcune aree protette hanno consapevolezza che la ricerca applicata supportata da una pubblicazione scientifica possa essere più solida, ma non è sempre vero. Un amministratore locale probabilmente avrebbe più facilità nel recepire un report scritto in italiano piuttosto che un articolo pubblicato su Science. La difficoltà di reperimento di articoli potrebbe non essere legata alla mancanza di ricerca.

**Q: Nella mie esperienza svizzera è risultato abbastanza corretto evidenziare come l'assenza di letteratura fosse corrispondente alla mancanza di ricerca specifica**

CI sono due problemi: la necessità di lunghe serie di dati e la dipendenza da modelli predittivi che ti impedisce di dare risultati certi sul futuro. Il Gran Paradiso ha collaborato col CNR per avere modelli climatici, c'è interesse. Il tutto è abbastanza poco organico e le connessioni si legano spesso alle contingenze e quindi alle reti della ricerca.

**Q: avere accumulato comunque una serie di dati, non necessariamente legati al cambiamento climatico, ti fornisce comunque la possibilità di creare ricerca sul cambiamento climatico, forse dandoti anche un vantaggio competitivo in termini di investimento finanziario e può incidere sul piano scientifico ed economico della ricerca**

Probabilmente sì. Le aree protette più antiche hanno il vantaggio di aver accumulato informazioni passate. Per aree protette di nuova formazione è più difficile.

**Q: tornando a “sottoprodotti della ricerca”, tra le vostre attività è prevista anche disseminazione dei risultati di ricerca sul territorio?**

Sì, lo stambecco si presta abbastanza bene. Nell'ultimo anno ho partecipato a tre o quattro conferenze, anche al di fuori dell'area del parco. Bergamo scienza, CNR a Pallanza, manifestazioni di turismo ed enogastronomia. Alcune specie si prestano bene per la divulgazione.

**Q: altro aspetto interessante è quello delle specie carismatiche in aree protette. Sicuramente queste catalizzano molto l'attenzione riguardo al cambiamento climatico presso il grande pubblico, ma probabilmente incontrano le preferenze anche della comunità scientifica. Credi**

**che godano di uno status privilegiato, perlomeno in fase di finanziamento? Possono inoltre ricoprire una funzione di “ricerca ombrello” e generare nuovi interessi di ricerca per specie e habitat ad esse collegati?**

Sicuramente. Ovviamente la diversità vegetale non attira molto l'attenzione, mentre con alcune specie animali è possibile fare ricerca anche in altri ambiti. Anche se devo dire che nel parco si studiano molti aspetti anche non in relazione ai cambiamenti climatici. Alcuni argomenti ci sembravano quasi impossibili da comunicare, ma ci siamo ricreduti. Il progetto LIFE bioacque, appena terminato, era sulla conformazione di ambienti acquatici d'acqua quota che ha portato all'eliminazione di un salmerino alieno da tutti gli ambienti, quindi non facile da comunicare, eppure la comunicazione ha funzionato. Probabilmente l'ambiente del Gran Paradiso è già sufficientemente carismatico da non dover aver bisogno dello stambecco. L'immagine stessa dei paesaggi del Gran Paradiso è riconoscibile ed è associato visualmente alla “natura vera”. Più complesso può essere per ambienti con impronta antropica più alta. Il Parco ha dei vantaggi. Se consideriamo però l'origine del Parco, di fatto la specie carismatica ha determinato l'istituzione del Parco e nei primissimi anni anche le sue politiche, con la rimozione di ciò che era dannoso per i popolamenti di stambecco. Il passaggio alla protezione totale dell'ambiente è stato abbastanza veloce comunque. Le specie carismatiche hanno quindi un'influenza. Oggi si sposta l'attenzione sulla biodiversità nel suo complesso, probabilmente i tempi sono più maturi per una comunicazione più complessa. Sono ovviamente sensazioni e non ho dati per dimostrarlo.

**Q: Effettivamente la sensazione è che non ci sia un'effettiva proporzione tra lo spazio che temi come – forse – biodiversità e – sicuramente – cambiamento climatico occupano nella comunicazione scientifica e gli effettivi volumi di ricerca che ci stanno dietro, seppure l'Europa rappresenti un centro di produzione della ricerca di primo livello.**

Vero

**Q: Parlando con Thomas Scheurer, quando ho fatto riferimento alla possibilità di utilizzare il caso dello stambecco del Gran Paradiso, mi ha sconsigliato di intraprendere questa strada, perché nella loro esperienza come Parco Nazionale Svizzero, è difficile trovare delle conseguenze evidenti del cambiamento climatico sulla specie, soprattutto perché lo stambecco tende a muoversi altitudinalmente, ma non molto in senso areale.**

Lo stambecco ha una dispersione molto bassa, ma ci sono lavori sulle popolazioni svizzere e sulla crescita delle corna. Loro l'hanno pubblicato, noi non ancora.

**Q: Non avete mai pubblicato lo studio?**

No non ancora ed è interessata per capire come funzioni effettivamente la ricerca. Abbiamo notato come le corna di stambecco si siano rimpicciolite negli anni. Abbiamo attribuito l'effetto al cambiamento climatico, ma qualcosa non tornava. Effettivamente ora ci siamo accorti che gli animali diventano più grossi, in termini di peso, mentre le corna rimpicciolivano in passato, salvo stabilizzarsi nel periodo recente. Probabilmente la dinamica è molto complessa. La difficoltà nel fare ricerca sul cambiamento climatico è una difficoltà di definizione: cosa significa cambiamento climatico? Intendiamo aumenti della temperatura? Cambiamenti nella disponibilità trofica? Cambiamenti dell'ambiente a livello geomorfologico? Pubblicare un lavoro esplicitamente dedicato agli effetti del cambiamento climatico, quando invece si monitora semplicemente gli effetti della temperatura sul

comportamento spaziale dello stambecco è ambiguo. In sede di divulgazione si può parlare in un certo modo. In sede di presentazione della ricerca, temperatura e comportamento spaziale non equivalgono a cambiamento climatico. Poter valutare un futuro effetto del cambiamento climatico è già un'altra cosa, ma capisci che si tratta di qualcosa di ipotetico sul futuro. Questo potrebbe contribuire nella difficoltà di reperire articoli.

**Q: Spesso la parola “climate change” appare proprio nelle keyword, per aggirare il problema di attribuzione**

La difficoltà nel delineare causa effetto è il problema principale, per cui non mi stupisce

**Q: La dicotomia tra spazio e luogo è centrale in geografia e negli studi geografici. Quello che noto nelle ricerche disponibili è che ci sono due modi di trattare lo spazio. Ricerche che si legano a una serie di osservazioni disponibili e che trattano con interesse non solo l'area protetta ma anche la comunità che vive il territorio più ampio. Al contrario, esistono ricerche che trattano lo spazio come “assoluto” e neutro, uno spazio replicabile in cui creare dei siti di osservazione. Le ricerche nel primo gruppo ovviamente non sono valide solo nel luogo in cui vengono effettuate, ma mantengono il principio di replicabilità. La vostra ricerca appartiene a questo gruppo?**

In realtà la replicabilità non è perfetta. Nel caso dello stambecco c'è molta variabilità tra diverse aree. Tra comunità animali ci possono essere popolazioni giovani e più vecchie, con dinamiche e storie diverse. Questo non è legato solo alle peculiari caratteristiche del Gran Paradiso, ma all'età della popolazione. Bisognerebbe avere condizioni analoghe altrove per poter replicare gli studi. Ci piacerebbe ci fossero altre aree in grado di replicare gli studi, ovviamente non in modo astratto in cui prendiamo un'area qualsiasi delle Alpi e facciamo il paragone, ma bisognerebbe cercare le stesse caratteristiche altrove. Bisogna però fare i conti con la realtà, non abbiamo un confronto possibile con i nostri dati. Per ragioni storico, politiche e umane abbiamo questa concentrazione di dati in questo luogo. Anche per le nostre direzioni di ricerca future sarebbe molto prezioso avere un riscontro per i dati. Magari 3-4 realtà simili con dati a lungo termine, così da poter comprendere al meglio la variabilità. Io sono favorevole ad abbracciare la replicabilità perché abbraccia al meglio un principio fondamentale della scienza.

**Q: interessante anche dal punto di vista della spinta professionale della ricerca. C'è una differenza tra ricerche che arrivano da una spinta storica e quelle che invece sono frutto di una direzione di politica della ricerca, ma credo resti piuttosto sensibile la separazione tra queste due tipologie differenti e non credo sia semplice colmare la distanza. La tua storia è abbastanza rivelatrice in tal senso**

No infatti. Parlando di inerzia, il mondo della ricerca e istituzioni europee sono abbastanza rapide nell'accogliere novità. Dal punto di vista delle singole istituzioni c'è più inerzia, è difficile recepire. Il Gran Paradiso è molto ricettivo da questo punto di vista. Certamente nessuno chiede di cambiare metodi di censimento, ma si partecipa a PhenoAlp tra Francia e Italia, anche noi dello stambecco partecipiamo a un progetto Interreg Italia-Francia. L'istituzione è propensa ad ampliare la prospettiva, ma capisco che un'area più piccola e con meno disponibilità possa fare fatica a raccogliere input esterni. Vero anche che oggi per attrarre investimenti e risorse bisogna cogliere queste opportunità, che sono



calate dall'alto ma possono funzionare. Il Gran Paradiso da questo punto di vista può trascinare anche altre aree per questo tipo di iniziative scientifiche

**Q: il che vuol dire che le aree più grandi sono quelle che “dettano” in un certo senso le priorità di ricerca per tutti**

Immagino di sì, le aree più grandi hanno più esperienza, ma io non partecipo a questo tipo di processi decisionali sulla ricerca. Le aree protette che hanno figure di ricerca comprovate in ambito accademico sono più potenti e si distinguono con facilità. Non tutte le aree protette hanno un servizio di ricerca interno, sono davvero poche e nemmeno tutti i Parchi Nazionali ce l'hanno. Attualmente l'obiettivo primo delle aree protette è conservare, ma è anche vero che per conservare bisogna conoscere. Ma con risorse limitate si fanno delle scelte e si privilegia la protezione

**Q: La cosa interessante della conservazione è che non sia una comunità esclusivamente scientifica, ma una comunità epistemica più ampia composta da portatori di interessi diversi**

Infatti. Io mi occupo di ricerca e collaboro con il parco, per cui tutto quello che dico non corrisponde alla visione del Parco Nazionale, ma la visione di un collaboratore che si occupa di ricerca. Se tu parlassi con gli amministrativi del Parco ti direbbero delle cose un po' diverse

Stefanie Von Fumetti (06.06.2018)

**Q: Importance of spring: how this monitoring initiative is born and how many scientists are involved in the initiative?**

At the beginning we have a loose network of researchers in National Park Gesause and of course another group of people working on springs in Germany, but not focused on National Park. We are now starting a specialist network on National Parks. We will probably have a network of 4 national parks Yesterday was the initial meeting.

**Q: Is the creation of a structured monitoring network a feasible goal for the immediate future?**

Yes, forming this network and doing research in the same way, so we can compare our data. Standardized methods and data holding and databases. Build up a bigger network of NGOs, programs and stakeholders is another goal of ours.

**Q: And National Parks will be still at the center of the attention?**

Yes, I think protected areas in general, like Natureparks in Switzerland.

**Q: This is personal: why springs and climate change?**

They are small water bodies which are really special. Special habitats with environmental condition that are pretty constant, but also under pressure because of the water demand from drinking water supplies, irrigation and cattle. From a research perspectives also exciting to understand how strongly adapted are the species living in. It is bad if we lose springs to drinking water supplies.

**Q: it is interesting because it's actually rare to see research on an ecotone different from the treeline or the timberline, that is the most common in the Alps.**

Yes it's true

**Q: Climate change and Alpine protected areas: from a spatial standpoint, research projects focused on climate change display an uneven distribution, and I am looking to figure out some reasons for this geographical pattern. If you take consideration of the dataset indexed in web of science as climate change research in the alpine area, we are well over 900 records. But if you narrow the focus on just PAs, you can count just fifty records. Moreover, if you take Switzerland as a geographical scale, almost nobody is carrying on research on climate change apparently. Why do you think climate change is so seldomly faced as a research problem?**

Probably there is a structure problem. They are looking to what is there (in the area) most of all.

**Q: probably is related to the young age of PAs in Switzerland.**

Yes, it is probably a structure problem, especially in Natureparks. They are probably focusing on inventories, looking what is there, of what you can find inside protected areas. They are just starting, like in Gantrisch and probably they have to meet the acceptance as first step.

**Q: The only park to display a strong body of research in climate change is The Swiss National Park, for obvious reasons.**

Maybe the topic of climate change is just wider than Natureparks (protected areas) and you have to look to whole countries or regions.

**Q I find it strange anyway. As you told yesterday [in the session], Protected Areas and parks should work as laboratories for science**

Definitely, yes.

**Q: I think sometimes they just fall short**

Yes, people should be more concerned. Maybe there is also a Gap between Universities and Nature Parks, and the former have no interest in connecting with the latter.

**Q: Climate change and Swiss parks: in my experience climate change is always treated as a secondary interest for parks and protected areas. Looking at the parkforschung database, for instance, one can hardly find any current project related to climate change, if not in the SNP. Talking with scientists and managers, I made up my mind on the fact that the international discourse on climate change has almost no gravitational pull whatsoever, and that research in the park is strongly local. Given this fact, the parks are basically not considering climate change as long as it is not impacting in some harmful way one of their core conservation objects (ex. Entlebuch or in someway SNP). Do you agree with this claim? Do you believe that small water bodies could play the role of catalyst for increasing interest around the topic in Alpine PAs?**

I agree. It is not so urgent for Naturepark to make research on climate change. And conversely, researchers don't need to go to parks to investigate impacts of climate change. For us [researchers belonging to the spring network] parks, national parks especially are important, because is where you can find pristine springs, so it is more obvious.

**Q: While speaking with Florian Knaus (research coordinator at the Entlebuch Regional Park) he agreed with me that climate change start to be something relevant to parks just when it compromise some of the core conservation targets or objects. This means that the general discourse around climate change has almost no gravitational pull in terms of catalyzing scientific interest.**

Yes, I agree with your claim

**Q: As a human geographer investigating the geographical distribution of research on the topic, I'm trying to make sense of the data I'm gathering. I am noting that the projects can be divided in space-related projects and place-related projects. What I mean is that the projects are aiming at the creation of structured standardized network where geography is treated as mere space, while some others are putting the place dimension, the local dimension, at the center of attention, like Gran Paradiso that is conducting research on the effects of climate change on the ibex and on the ecosystem sustaining it. I think this are the two main directions for the development of climate change research.**

Yes, we are probably at the beginning of our research endeavors

**Q: And this is interesting because if you consider the global climate change discourse, even in relation with protected areas, it raised at least ten years ago. If we take another region, talking about regional geography of science, like the border between USA and Canada, they started earlier. I am trying to understand what political, social and economical condition allowed that to happen so earlier. I think this is related to their idea of what nature conservation should be (static scenario)**

Yes, but you also need the people to carry on the research. I wouldn't have been there ten years ago

**Q: a good deal of research is carried on by young researcher. I read once about the researches of Joseph Grinnell on altitudinal distribution being reused by a group of scientist in order to understand the altitudinal range shifts caused by climate change**

As I said yesterday, there is plenty of data from the Sixties, but it is not easy to do a comparison. The first data on springs that went to the direction of climate change were from the Berchtesgaden National Park in Germany, but it wasn't a long-term monitoring, just 6 springs for 10 years. That is not enough

**Q: You said yesterday you have not yet data series**

Yes, we don't have a continuous data series. We have data series, but not continuous. You need continuously to have the personnel to monitor. It is also a financial issue.

**Q: Talking with some of the scientist involved in the epistemic community of conservation in the Alps I discovered some position of "skepticism", not on climate change itself, but more on**

**the effective role that climate change covers in the general discourse around the future priorities for alpine conservation. For instance, one researcher told me that he wants to see evidence about documented influences of climate change on the structure of ecosystems, so something beyond the migration of single species and minor alteration to the composition of the species. Do you agree with this claim?**

Yes, definitely. We don't have any evidences. I think for scientists climate change is great, there a lot of things to research. Totally agree with the claim

**Q: Could we have more evidences in the near future?**

We need more research on structure and functions. We need to understand how food webs function, how they may change if some parts of the food webs vanish or become less, food availability changes and so on. We need first to know how it work now in order to project it in the future.

**Q: Let me rephrase the question: are we in the physical-political and financial position to expect more science to be developed?**

Depends on the financial institutions. It could be.

**Q: I expect that, at some point in the future, it might be time for a scientific coordination between states. The networks arising right now are cross-borders.**

Being at this conference I have the feeling that a lot of third party's money will go into another direction, not to ecological research. Drinking water supplies, conflicts management, irrigation, agriculture. Agriculture vs Drinking water is the main conflict.

**Q: Talking about human intervention in conservation, you said yesterday that in the future these species could migrate**

Yes, could migrate, we don't know yet

**Q: Let's say the must migrate, but they are not in the position to. What should we do? They are gone?**

They are gone, yeah. If they are not able to adapt to higher temperatures or to shift, they are gone in certain regions. Probably not everywhere

**Q: It is interesting because in other parts of the world they are considering assisted migration. Relocating physically.**

I think most of them should be able to move to higher altitudes. It should be possible for them to migrate. We can see it with plants, in the GLORIA project.

Bruno Baur (24.09.2018)

**Q: During my research, I had the occasion to work on different spatial scales, ranging from the entire Alpine Macroregion to the Swiss Alps. The distribution of climate change research in PAs in the Alpine range displays variability depending from the scale of observation: if the Alps as a region show a distinctive distribution, the Swiss section of the Alps is contradicting the general rule, since Switzerland – outside of SNP – is the less involved in climate change inquiries in PAs. Mining the parkforschung database, it is evident that research records on the topic are very few. Why do you think climate change is not a matter of concern for Swiss PAs?**

Before I can answer this question, what do you mean with PAs? Just the National Park? You have also included the Biosphere reserves? Naturepark are not a PA in a narrow sense, are more of a tool to support people in not-well developed area of Switzerland. It is more a way to support sustainable development in the landscape, but has nothing to do with concerning nature. You should restrict the sample to SNP and biosphere reserves. If you consider SNP there are a lot of Climate Change research projects. Nature park are the wrong targets, they do not demand nature protection or research. If you restrict the sample, the research topic is not under-distributed. Most of the farmers are denying climate change, but they are becoming weaker. They are extremely conservative.

**Q: Your research record – snails keep the pace – is part of the small dataset of WoS indexed research records I analysed during my research. This kind of research, focused on the shift of the distribution range of some species, is one of the most common across different “scientific regions”, probably starting from the famous study of Camille Parmesan on Butterflies’ distribution. However, in Switzerland and, more in general in Alpine PAs, this type of study is not widely diffused. Why do you think – especially in light of the expected results of climate change – these studies are so underrepresented in the total body of research?**

It depends on the availability of historical data. I do not agree with the claim, they are becoming more and more published, just look at the Gloria project that is considering many mountain tops, including some in PAs. The availability of data is a factor, and secondly, in order to have enough replication in statistical analysis, you need larger areas than PAs. Our snail projects we have two of the nine lines (transects?) were situated at the border of the PA. Often PAs are not large enough to get good sample sizes. I can tell you now that there are studies on their way or already published on shift in distribution. One from birds, that should have an associated manuscript. The Ibex has been recorded at higher elevations, there is a good dataset, but I think they do not have published yet. In SNP there is another research on elevational shift on millipeds, but we are still doing fieldwork. Probably it will be published in two years.

**Q: A problem of timing?**

We have to see for historical data also. Availability and quality of the data. Sometimes you have poor descriptions of the sampling sizes. Or unprecise reports of locations. A problem of homogenization.

**Q: Some of the interviewee highlighted how the task of the PAs should not be to “fight” climate change, but to adapt, and generate new meaning for the people living in the parks, or**

**visiting it. This focus is probably coherent with the idea of connectivity, that is basically enlarging the scale of conservation, from the single PA to a wider landscape of connected PAs. However, I cannot understand why – if we expect species to move, and we are already envisioning a future with new species assemblages – we are not actually studying how species are moving in response to climate change in our PAs? Is this field of inquiry scientifically and politically relevant?**

You cannot fight against climate change, it is mainly a political issue. In most PAs they will have a new species assemblage. Where specialized species will stay in the future? In Switzerland in the next two decades biodiversity is probably going to increase. But these new species are common, generalist species, able to live in different situations. Our concern should be on the rare, highly specialized species. They can move relatively, most of the specialist will not be able to migrate from one site to the other. Of the PAs they should think more of these species, because they could have refuge for them. Some of them will probably become extinct with the competition of colonizing species, but there actually is the key question: what to do we do for rare and specialized species? You can try to figure out tools for particular species, but a general answer is beyond me. It is a large question mark.

**Q: I noted that recently you organized a new research project in UNESCO Biosphere Val Mustair on the resurvey of millipeds diversity. This fact highlights the importance of having a body of reference data that can be used as a benchmark for measuring changes. Many interviewees highlighted the importance of having stored data. In the case of Switzerland, and its relatively new PAs, can this be an adverse factor in developing climate research?**

It is mainly in the SNP. Let's say that all the data – not only millipeds, also snails – collected either in SNP or biosphere reserve Val Mustair are also stored in the SNP archive, a server where all data collected are stored by scientific group of park directors. We have also two different systems in Switzerland in Neuchatel, and I can send you afterwards their homepage, where you can see for most group of animals the distribution maps. Rare snakes or butterfly are still under working, so they can receive it on-demand, but not published on the website. We all send our data to the center, excel sheets with all the data. It is funny because if you consider my snails research, they afford distribution maps and you can see that the area is well studied, there is an accumulation of points there. You can see information of the species, their changes in time, a good example are breeding birds. You can see here that birds are the more studied. With two different systems we can store all the data. Many groups are difficult to disentangle the effects of changes of distribution or sampling biases.

**Q: International monitoring network active today in the Alps are quite a good number at the moment. Are they a good tool to overcome data scarcity? In my analysis, I noted that small or young PAs with little research history are being involved in climate change studies thanks to the inclusion in research networks. In a comparative analysis I discovered that the rate of climate change research indexed in WoS coming from small PAs is very low. Nevertheless, their involvement in this kind of programmes is higher. I have two questions. 1) Can, on a scientific level, the temporal analysis of the development of a variable be traded for the spatial analysis of the evolution of a variable, countering the problem of the scarcity of reference data?**

**2) Are these programmes – like GLORIA – the most effective way of promoting climate change research and bring epistemic and policy relevance to topics such as species migration?**

Yes, space for time approach is a good way to approach the question. But since itself is not made by the single researchers, but a community. Different approaches should be used. If they all point the same finding one can be sure that the pattern actually exists. If the space for time approach point at different results you have to be careful. I prefer to use other scientific approaches, we used meta-analysis, synthesizing very different results. Elevational shift may be now be enough published to allow a meta-analysis. When you are considering WoS however, you are looking just at peer reviewed journals written in English. Smaller PA sometimes they publish in a more regional context. We have different journals from Nature forschung wissenschaften, society for nature research. Probably there are more than ten different journals that are publishing in German or France. Those results are not included in WoS, is the problem of grey literature. It is an interesting question to understand if grey literature shows the same pattern of WoS. It should, but could be that grey literature is focusing more on regional or local aspects. It could also be that this literature has a lower scientific quality. This can be a matter of concern, but still we cannot neglect the grey literature. Some of them are very good data, but the results are strange and cannot be published in a state of the art journal.

**Q: Speaking with Thomas Scheurer and Stefanie Von Fumetti, they stressed by one side how climate changes effects on the level of structure and function of ecosystems are still to be proved, while on the other we need more basic research on ecosystems in order to better understand how climate changes might influence the future. Do you agree with these claims?**

You should know both Scheurer and Von Fumetti are not specialist on ecosystems. There are various studies going on climate change affecting ecosystem functioning. This is a rather complicated question. You might have direct and indirect effects. For example, cc allows a better development of invasive species. In the past, when we had cold winter, it peeled many invasive species. We have now warmer winters and invasive can develop better. The problem is serious and depending strictly to climate change. In my group we are finalizing a study on Himalayan balsam: where the species occur you have half of the root biomass in the soil. Root biomass is directly or inversely correlated with soil erosion. Less roots equals erosion and viceversa. Ecosystem functioning avoiding erosion is depending on the amount roots. The invasive species is diminishing the amount of roots and extinction of previous communities, you will have more erosion. A typical way of indirect effects of cc on soil stability. These systems are complex, not easy to communicate to wider audience and lay persons. So it is difficult to communicate these projects, but it is also easier to record changing in species distribution, but studying the responses of ecosystems is a demanding task, that cannot be by a single person. They are just more demanding questions. There are few group willing to do this kind of research, because you have to invest more time, money and manpower to get ecosystem results. It is easier to have results in species distribution with a lower-investment research. Saying that we need more data is a superficial answer. One should ask why we need more, and I am trying to do this

*Cited references*

1. **Acquaotta F., Fratianni S., Garzena D.**, 2015, “Temperature changes in the North-Western Italian Alps from 1961 to 2010”, *Theoretical and applied climatology*, vol. 122, is. 3-4, p. 619-634.
2. **Adams J. S.**, 2006, *The future of the Wild. Radical Conservation for a Crowded World*, Beacon Press, Boston.
3. **ALPARC, 2010**, *Biodiversity in time of climate change: management or wilderness?*, New Challenges of the Alpine Protected Areas series, ALPARC
4. **Anfossi G.**, 1912, “Regime pluviometrico e regime fluviale nelle Alpi Occidentali”, *Atti dell'Associazione Elettrotecnica Italiana*, (XVI, no.5).
5. **Arpin I., Gaëlle R., Scheurer T., Wallner A., Hobléa F., Churakova O., Cremer-Schulte D., Braun V.**, 2016, “The scientific councils of Alpine protected areas: an overview and analysis of their contribution to linking science and management”, *Eco.mont*, vol. 8, n. 2.
6. **Bätzing, W.**, 2003, *Le Alpi. Una regione unica al centro dell'Europa*, Bollati Boringhieri, Torino.
7. **Beniston M.**, 2006, Mountain weather and climate: A general overview and a focus on climatic change in the Alps, *Hydrobiologia*, Vol. 562, p. 3-16.
8. **Beniston M., Stoffel M.**, 2016, “Rain-on-snow events, floods and climate change in the Alps: Events may increase with warming up to 4 degrees C and decrease thereafter”, *Science of the total environment*, Vol. 571, p. 228-236.
9. **Bennet N. J., Roth R., Klain S. C., Chan K., Christie P., Clark D. A., Cullman G., Curran D., Durbin T. J., Epstein G., Greenberg A., Nelson M. P., Sandlos J., Stedman R., Teel T. L., Thomas R., Verissimo D., Wyborn C.**, 2016, “Conservation social science: Understanding and integrating human dimensions to improve conservation”, *Biological Conservation*, n. 205, 93-108.
10. **Bonardi L.**, 2004, *Che tempo faceva? Variazioni del clima e conseguenze sul popolamento umano. Fonti, metodologie e prospettive*, Franco Angeli, Milano.



11. **Bonardi L., Tolusso E.**, 2016, La Geografia italiana di fronte ai cambiamenti climatici, in Canigiani F., *Ambiente il nostro futuro*, Nicomp, Firenze.
12. **Bonato S.**, 2016, *Searching the Grey Literature A Handbook for Searching Reports, Working Papers, and Other Unpublished Research*, Rowman & Littlefield, Lahnam.
13. **Bornmann L., Leydesdorff L., Walch-Solimena C., Ettl C.**, 2011, “Mapping excellence in the geography of science: An approach based on Scopus data”, *Journal of Informetrics*, Vol. 5, is. 4, p. 537-546
14. **Bornmann L., Waltman L.**, 2011, “The detection of "hot regions" in the geography of science-A visualization approach by using density maps”, *Journal of Informetrics*, Vol.5, is. 4, p. 547-553.
15. **Brambilla M., Bergero V., Bassi E., Falco R.**, 2015, “Current and future effectiveness of Natura 2000 network in the central Alps for the conservation of mountain forest owl species in a warming climate”, *European Journal of Wildlife research*, Vol 61, is. 1, p. 35-44
16. **Brockington D.**, 2002, *Fortress Conservation. The Preservation of the Mkomazi Game Reserve, Tanzania*, Indiana University Press, Indianapolis.
17. **Brun J.J, Perrin T.**, « La montagne, laboratoire pour la science ? ou laboratoire pour la société ? », *Revue de Géographie Alpine*, 89-2, p. 29-38.
18. **Cannone N., Diolaiuti G., Giglielmin M., Smiraglia C.**, 2008, « Accelerating climate change impacts on alpine glacier forefield ecosystems in the European Alps », *Ecological Applications*, Vol. 18, is. 3, p. 637-648.
19. **Casty C.**, 2005, “Temperature and precipitation variability in the european Alps since 1500”, *International Journal of Climatology*, vol.25, p. 1855-1880.
20. **Chmielewski, F. M., Rotzer T.**, 2001, “Response of tree phenology to climate change across Europe”, *Agricultural and Forest Meteorology*, Vol. 108, is. 2, p. 101-112.
21. **Clark J.A., Loehmann R.A., Keane R.E.**, 2017, “Climate changes and wildfire alter vegetation of Yellowstone National Park, but forest cover persists”, *Ecosphere*, Vol. 8, is. 1.

22. **Colwell R., Avery S., Berger J., Davis G.E., Hamilton H., Lovejoy T., Malcolm S., McMullen A., Novacek M., Roberts R.J., Tapia R., Machlis G.**, 2012, *Revisiting Leopold: Resource stewardship in the National Park. Report of the National Park System Advisory Board Science Committee*, U.S. National Park Service, Washington D.C.
23. **Cross R., Borgatti S.P., Parker A.**, 2002, “Making invisible work visible: Using social network analysis to support strategic collaboration”, *California Management Review*, Vol. 44, is. 2, p. 25.
24. **Curry J.A., Webster P.J.**, 2011, “Climate Science and the uncertainty monster”, *American Meteorological Society*, p. 1667-1682
25. **Debarbieux B.**, 2001, «Conclusion. La montagne dans la recherche scientifique : statuts, paradigmes et perspectives», *Revue de Géographie Alpine*, 89-2, p. 101-121
26. **De Bont R., Lochmund J.**, 2017, *Spatializing the history of ecology. Sites, Journeys, Mappings*, Routledge, New York.
27. **De Solla Price D. J.**, 1963, *Little Science, Big Science*, Columbia University Press, New York.
28. **Dobbertin M., Wermelinger B., Bigler C., Burgi M., Carron M., Forster B., Gimmi U., Rigling A.**, 2007, “Linking increasing drought stress to Scots pine mortality and bark beetle infestations”, *The Scientific World Journal*, vol. 7, p. 231-239.
29. **Dobremez J-F.**, «La montagne du biologiste», *Revue de Géographie Alpine*, 89-2, p. 93-100.
30. **Driver F.**, 1994, “NEW PERSPECTIVES ON THE HISTORY AND PHILOSOPHY OF GEOGRAPHY”, *Progress in Human Geography*, Vol. 18, is. 1, p. 92-100
31. **Dudley S.A. , Murphy G.P., File A.L.**, 2013, “Kin recognition and competition in plants”, *Functional Ecology*, Vol. 27, is.4, p. 898-906.
32. **Dunlop M., Brown P.**, 2008, *Implications of climate change for Australia’s National Reserve System: A preliminary assessment*, Report to the Department of Climate Change, February 2008. Department of Climate Change, Canberra, Australia.

33. **European Commission**, 2013, *Guidelines on Climate Change and Natura 2000. Dealing with the impact of climate change On the management of the Natura 2000 Network of areas of high biodiversity value*, European Union.
34. **Farinotti D., Huss M., Bauder A., Funk M.**, 2009, “An estimate of the glacier ice volume in the Swiss Alps”, *Global and Planetary Change*, Vol. 68, is. 3, p. 225-231.
35. **Fleming J.**, 2014, “Political Ecology and the Geography of Science: Lesosady, Lysenkoism, and Soviet Science in Kyrgyzstan's Walnut-Fruit Forest”, *Annals of the Association of American Geographers*, 104:6, 1183-1198.
36. **Finnegan D.**, 2008, “The spatial turn: Geographical approaches in the history of science”, *Journal of the History of Biology*, Vol. 41 is. 2, p. 369-388.
37. **Gehrig-Fasel J., Guisan A., Zimmermann N. E.**, 2007, “Tree line shifts in the Swiss Alps: Climate change or land abandonment?”, *Journal of Vegetation Science*, Vol. 18, is. 4, p. 571-582
38. **Gobiet A., Kotlarski S., Beniston M., Heinrich G., Rajczak J., Stoffel M.**, 2014, “21st century climate change in the European Alps-A review”, *Science of the total environment*, vol. 493, p. 1138-1151.
39. **Groulx M., Lemieux C.J., Lewis J.L., Brown S.**, 2017, “Understanding consumer behaviour and adaptation planning responses to climate-driven environmental change in Canada's parks and protected areas: a climate futurescapes approach”, *Journal of Environmental Planning and Management*, Vol. 60, is. 6, p. 1016-1035.
40. **Haas P.**, 1992, “Epistemic Communities and International Policy Coordination”, *International Organization*, vol. 46, is. 1 p. 1-35.
41. **Haller H., Eisenhut A., Haller R.**, 2013, *Atlas du Parc National Suisse. Les 100 premières années*,
42. **Hammer T., Mose I., Siegrist N. Weixlbaumer N.**, 2016, *Parks of the Future. Protected Areas in Europe challenging regional and global change*, Oekom, Munchen.
43. **Hodgetts T.**, 2017, “Wildlife conservation, multiple biopolitics and animal subjectification: three mammals' tales”, *Geoforum*, no 79, 17-25.

44. **Huelber K., Gottfried M., Pauli H., Reiter K., Winkler M., Grabherr G.,** 2006, “Phenological responses of snowbed species to snow removal dates in the Central Alps: Implications for climate warming”, *Arctic, Antarctic and Alpine Research*, Vol. 38, is. 1, p. 99-103.
45. **Huggins R., Thompson P.,** 2017, “Entrepreneurial networks and open innovation: the role of strategic and embedded ties”, *Industry and innovation*, 24 – 4, p. 403-435.
46. **Igoe J., Brockington D., Duffy R.,** 2008, *Nature unbound. Conservation, capitalism and the future of protected areas*, Earthscan, London.
47. **IUCN,** 2016, *Adapting to climate change : guidance for protected area managers and planners*, IUCN, Gland.
48. **Jackson M.,** 2015, “Glaciers and climate change: narratives of ruined futures”, *Wiley Interdisciplinary reviews – climate change*, Vol. 6, is. 5, p. 479-492.
49. **Kamelarczyk K.B.F., Smith Hall C.,** 2014, “REDD herring: Epistemic community control of the production, circulation and application of deforestation knowledge in Zambia”, *Forest Policy and Economics*, Vol. 46, p. 19-29.
50. **Keller D. R., Golley F.B.,** 2000, *The philosophy of ecology. From science to synthesis*, University of Georgia Press, Athens and London.
51. **Keller F., Kienast F. Beniston M.,** 2000, “Evidence of response of vegetation to environmental change on high-elevation sites in the Swiss Alps”, *Regional Environmental Change*, Vol.1, is. 2, p. 70-77.
52. **Kratzer A.,** 2018, “Biosphere Reserves research: a bibliometric analysis”, *eco.mont Journal on Protected Mountain Areas Research*, vol. 10, is. 2, p.36-49.
53. **Kupper P.,** 2014, *Creating Wilderness. A Transnational History of the Swiss National Park*, Berghahn, New York.
54. **Lambrecht A., Kuhn M.,** 2007, “Glacier changes in the Austrian Alps during the last three decades, derived from the new Austrian glacier inventory”, *Annals of Glaciology*, Vol. 46, p. 177.
55. **Latersner M., Schneebeli M.,** 2003, “Long-term snow climate trends of the Swiss Alps (1931-99)”, *International Journal of Climatology*, Vol. 23, is. 7, p. 735-750.

56. **Latour B**, 1988, *Science in action. How to follow scientists and engineers through society*, Harvard University Press, Cambridge.
57. **Lemieux C.J., Scott D.J.**, 2005, "Climate change, biodiversity conservation and protected area planning in Canada", *Canadian Geographer*, Vol. 49, is. 4, p. 384-399.
58. **Lemieux C.J., Beechey T.J., Scott D.J., Gray. P.A.**, 2010, *Protected Areas and Climate Change in Canada. Challenges and Opportunities for Adaptation*, Canadian Council on Ecological Research Occasional paper No. 19, CCEA Secretariat, Ottawa, Ontario, Canada. xii
59. **Lemieux C.J., Beechey T.J., Scott D.J., Gray. P.A.**, 2011, "The state of climate change adaptation in Canada's protected areas sector", *Canadian Geographer*, Vol. 53, is. 3, p. 301-317.
60. **Lemieux C.J., Beechey T.J., Scott D.J., Gray. P.A.**, 2011, "Prospects for Canada's protected areas in an era of rapid climate change", *Land Use Policy*, vol. 28, is. 4, p. 928-941.
61. **Leydersdorff L., Persson O.**, 2010, "Mapping the Geography of Science: Distribution Patterns and Networks of Relations Among Cities and Institutes", *JOURNAL OF THE AMERICAN SOCIETY FOR INFORMATION SCIENCE AND TECHNOLOGY*, Vol. 61, is. 8, p. 1622-1634.
62. **Livingstone D. N.**, 1995, "THE SPACES OF KNOWLEDGE - CONTRIBUTIONS TOWARDS A HISTORICAL GEOGRAPHY OF SCIENCE", *Environment and Planning D- Society and Space*, Vol. 13 is. 1, p. 5-34.
63. **Livingstone D. N.**, 2003, *Putting science in its place. Geographies of scientific knowledge*, University of Chicago Press, Chicago and London.
64. **Lorenzi A.**, 1899, "Intorno ai limiti altimetrici dei fenomeni fisici e biologici", *In Alto - Cronaca della Società Alpina Friulana*, X.
65. **Lorimer J.**, 2012, "Multinatural geographies for the Anthropocene", *Progress in Human Geography*, Vol. 36, is. 5., p. 593-612.
66. **Lorimer J.**, 2015, *Wildlife in the Anthropocene. Conservation after Nature*, University of Minnesota Press, Minneapolis and London.

67. **Mahoney M., Hulme M.**, 2018, Epistemic geographies of climate change: Science, space and politics, *Progress in Human Geography*, Vol. 42, is. 3, p. 395-424.
68. **Marinelli O.**, 1909, “Le Alpi nell'epoca glaciale secondi i professori Peck e Bruckner”, *Rivista Geografica Italiana*, XVI-V.
69. **Marinelli O.**, 1901 “Le osservazioni morfologiche sulle Alte Alpi del prof. E. Richter”, *In Alto - Cronaca della Società Alpina Friulana*, XII.
70. **Marini A., Tolusso E.**, 2016, “Il concetto di Hyperobject nella geografia contemporanea”, *Glocalism; Journal of Culture, Politics and Innovation*, vol. 3.
71. **Metzquieda J.A.A., Muñoz-Santos M., Mùgica de la Guerra M.**, 2018, *Las áreas protegidas en el contextodel cambio global: incorporación de la adaptaciónal cambio climático en la planificación y gestión.Segunda edición, revisada y ampliada*, Ed. Fundación Interuniversitaria Fernando González Bernáldez para los espacios naturales, Madrid.
72. **Milly P. C. D., Betancourt J., Falkenmark M., Hirsch R. M., Kundzewicz Z. W., Lattenmeier D. P., Stouffer R. J.**, 2008, “Climate change - Stationarity is dead: Whither water management?”, *Science*, Vol. 319, is. 5863, p.573-574.
73. **Möbius K.**, 1880, “An Oyster bank is a Biocönose”, in Keller D. R., Golley F.B., 2000, *The philosophy of ecology. From science to synthesis*, University of Georgia Press, Athens and London.
74. **Monterin U.**, 1926, “Le variazioni periodiche dei ghiacciai italiani 1925”, *Bollettino del comitato glaciologico italiano*, XLV-no.6.
75. **Monterin U.**, 1931, “Le variazioni periodiche dei ghiacciai italiani 1930”, *Bollettino del comitato glaciologico italiano*, IX-no.11.
76. **Monterin U.**, 1932, “Le variazioni periodiche dei ghiacciai italiani 1931”, *Bollettino del comitato glaciologico italiano*, X- no. 12.
77. **Monterin U.**, 1933, “Le variazioni periodiche dei ghiacciai italiani 1932”, *Bollettino del comitato glaciologico italiano*, XI- no. 13.
78. **Monterin U.**, 1934, “Le variazioni periodiche dei ghiacciai italiani 1933”, *Bollettino del comitato glaciologico italiano*, XII- no. 14.
79. **Monterin U.**, 1935, “Le variazioni periodiche dei ghiacciai italiani 1934”, *Bollettino del comitato glaciologico italiano*, XIII- no. 15.

80. **Monterin U.**, 1936, “Le variazioni periodiche dei ghiacciai italiani 1935”, *Bollettino del comitato glaciologico italiano*, XIV- no. 16.
81. **Monterin U.**, 1936, *Sulle variazioni del limite superiore del bosco sulle Alpi in epoca storica*, Reale accademia delle scienze, Torino.
82. **Mortiz M.A., Stephens S.L.**, 2008, “Fire and sustainability: considerations for California's altered future climate”, *Climatic Change*, Vol. 87, p. 265-271.
83. **Nash R.**, 1967, *Wilderness and the American Mind*, Yale University Press, New Haven.
84. **Neumann R. P.**, 2017, “Life Zones. The rise and Decline of a theory of the Geographic Distribution of Species”, in De Bont R., Lochmund J., 2017, *Spatializing the history of ecology. Sites, Journeys, Mappings*, Routledge, New York.
85. **Orlove B., Lazrus H., Hovelsrund G.K., Giannini A.**, 2014, “Recognitions and Responsibilities On the Origins and Consequences of the Uneven Attention to Climate Change around the World”, *Current Anthropology*, Vol. 55, is. 3, p. 249-275.
86. **Parc National du Mercantour**, 2017, *Stratégie Scientifique du Parc National du Mercantour 2018-2022*.
87. **Parmesan C.**, 2006, “Ecological and evolutionary responses to recent climate change”, *Annual review of ecology, evolution and systematics*, vol. 37, p. 637-669.
88. **Parmesan C.**, 2007, Influences of species, latitudes and methodologies on estimates of phenological response to global warming, *Global Change Biology*, Vol. 13, is. 9, p. 1860-1872.
89. **Parmesan C., Yohe G.**, 2003, “A globally coherent fingerprint of climate change impacts across natural systems”, *Nature*, Vol. 421, is. 6918, p. 37-42.
90. **Pauli H., Gottfried M., Lamprecht A., Nießner S., Rumpf S., Winkler M., Steinbauer K., Grabherr G.**, 2015, *The GLORIA field manual. Standard Multi-summit approach, supplementary methods and extra approaches, 5<sup>th</sup> edition*, GLORIA-Coordination, Austrian Academy of Sciences & University of Natural Resources and Life Sciences, Vienna.

91. **Petrovich E.**, 2018, “Forms, patterns, structures. Citation analysis and the history of analytic philosophy”, *Journal of interdisciplinary history of ideas*, Vol. 7, n. 13, item 11.
92. **Plassmann G., Kohler Y., Walzer C.**, 2016, *Alpine Nature 2030, Creating [ecological] connectivity for generations to come*, Federal Ministry for the Environment, Nature Conservation, Building and Nuclear Safety, Berlin.
93. **Powell R. C.**, 2007 “Geographies of science: histories, localities, practices, futures”, *Progress in Human Geography*, 31 (3), 309-329.
94. **Rebetez M.**, 2009, *Le Alpi sotto serra. L'esempio della Svizzera di fronte ai cambiamenti climatici*, Casagrande, Bellinzona.
95. **Said E.W.**, 1983, *Travelling Theory*, in Said E., *The World, the Text, and the Critic*, Harvard University Press, Cambridge (MS).
96. **Scaramellini G.**, 1996, *Montagne mediterranee, montagne continentali. Problemi e prospettive di sviluppo sostenibile nelle comunità e nei territori montani*, Guerini Scientifica, Milano
97. **Scheurer T.**, 2016, “The role of science in governing and managing the parks of the future”, in Hammer T., Mose I., Siegrist N. Weixlbaumer N., 2016, *Parks of the Future. Protected Areas in Europe challenging regional and global change*, Oekom, Munchen, p. 241-246.
98. **Scheurer T., Sgard A.**, 2008, “Mountain research in the Alps and the rest of the world: a retrospective look”, *Journal of Alpine Research*, 96-4.
99. **Schmidt di Friedberg M.**, 2004, *L'arca di Noè. Conservazionismo tra natura e cultura, Giappichelli*, Torino.
100. **Scott D.J., Lemiwux C.J.**, 2005, “Climate change and protected area policy and planning in Canada”, *Forestry Chronicle*, vol. 81, is. 5, p. 696-703.
101. **Soulé M.E.**, 1985, “What is Conservation Biology”, *Bioscience*, Vol. 35, is. 11, p. 727-734.
102. **Theurillat J-P., Guisan A.**, 2001, “Potential impact of climate change on vegetation in the European Alps: a review”, *Climatic change*, vol. 50, 77-109.
103. **Thompson J. N.**, 1998, Rapid evolution as an ecological process, *Trends in Ecology & Evolution*, Vol. 13, is. 8, p. 329-332.



104. **Turnhout E., Behagel J., Ferranti F., Beunen R.**, 2015, “The construction of legitimacy in European nature policy: expertise and participation in the service of cost-effectiveness”, *Environmental Politics*, Vol. 24, is. 3, p. 461-480.
105. **Turner N.J., Clifton H.**, 2009, “It's so different today”: Climate change and indigenous lifeways in British Columbia, Canada, *Global Environmental Change*, Vol. 19, is. 2, p.180-190.
106. **Van Eck N.J., Waltman L.**, 2010, “Software survey: VOSviewer, a computer program for bibliometric mapping”, *Scientometrics*, Vol. 84, is. 2, p. 523-538.
107. **Vetter J.**, 2017, “Field Stations and the Problem of Scale”, in De Bont R., Lochmund J., *Spatializing the history of ecology. Sites, Journeys, Mappings*, Routledge, New York.
108. **Vranješ M., Škornik I., Santi S., Costa M.**, 2013, *Climate Change and management of protected areas. Studies on biodiversity, visitor flows and energy efficiency*. Portrož, Bled.
109. **Wallner A.**, 2012, Thematic catalogue of research topics on Swiss Parks, *eco.mont Journal on Protected Mountain Areas Research*, Vol.4 is. 2, p. 37-40.
110. **Wilson J.B.**, 2011, “The twelve theories of co-existence in plant communities: the doubtful, the important and the unexplored”, *Journal of Vegetation Science*, Vol. 22, is. 1, p. 184-195.
111. **Zimmerer K. S.**, 2000, “The Reworking of Conservation Geographies: Nonequilibrium Landscapes and Nature-Society Hybrids”, *Annals of the Association of American Geographers*, vol. 90 no. 2)
112. **Zuccala A., Robinson-Garcia N., Repiso R., Torres-Salinas D.**, 2016, “Using network centrality measures to improve national journal classification lists”, (*proceeding of) 21ST INTERNATIONAL CONFERENCE ON SCIENCE AND TECHNOLOGY INDICATORS (STI 2016)*), pp. 1095-1105
113. **Zullini M., Zunino A.**, 2004, *Biogeografia. La dimensione spaziale dell'evoluzione*, Casa Editrice Ambrosiana, Milano

## CITED REFERENCES OF PARAGRAPH II.4

1. **Breining G.**, 2016, “Climate change will reshape our national parks. Here's how they'll adapt”, *Vox*, <https://www.vox.com/2016/5/16/11666602/global-warming-national-parks>
2. **Hansen K.**, 2016, “Preparing for Climate Change in National Parks”, *NASA Earth Observatory*, <https://earthobservatory.nasa.gov/Features/NationalParksClimate>
3. **Milman O.**, 2016, “Climate Change will mean the end of National Parks as we know them”, *The Guardian*, <https://www.theguardian.com/environment/2016/aug/22/climate-change-national-parks-threat>
4. **Nijhuis M.**, 2016 “How the Parks of tomorrow will be different”, *National Geographic*, <https://www.nationalgeographic.com/magazine/2016/12/national-parks-climate-change-rising-sea-weather/>
5. **Than K.**, 2016, “How Climate Change will transform the National Parks’ Iconic Animals and Palnts” *Smithsonian.com*, <https://www.smithsonianmag.com/science-nature/how-climate-change-transforming-national-parks-iconic-animals-and-plants-180960046/>